Palmerin D' Oliua.

THE MIRROVR OF NOBILITIE, THE MAPPE of Honour, Anatomie of rare Fortunes, Heroycall president of Loue: Wonder for Chiualrie, and most accomplished Knight in all perfections.

presenting to Noble mindes, their Courtly desires, to Gentles their choyse expectations, and to the inferiour sort, how to imitate their vertues: handled with modestie, to shunne offence, yet all delightfull, for Recreation.

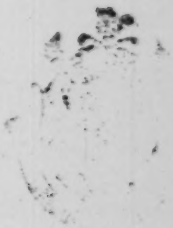
Written in Spanish, Italian, and French, and from them turned into English, by A.M. one of the Messengers of his Maiesties Chamber.

Patere & Abstine.

LONDON
Printed by *Thomas Creede*.
1615.

COLL
DE
SION
LOND
MDCXXX
SION COLLEGE LIBRARY

ARC
K73-3b
P18



SION COLLEGE
LIBRARY.

TO THE WORSHIPFVLL

Maſter *Frances Yong*, of *Brent-Pelham*, in the County of *Hertfort*, *Eſquire*, *and to* Miſtreſſe *Suſan Yong* his wife, and my moſt kind Miſtreſſe, *health, and their hearts contentment*, continually wiſhed.

BEeing indebted to you both for your manifold kindneſſes, I am bold to continue my labour begun, concerning the courſe of my promiſed Hiſtories, this being the firſt part of Palmerin D' Oliua, *ringleader to all the reſt, and therefore the originall from whence they which follow haue bin deriued. Though in my tranſlating they came laſt which ſhould haue bin firſt, now I haue good hope, that by the reprinting of them ouer againe, at length they will come to a iuſt order, and each haue his place as their courſe deſcribeth. The ſecond part of this will ſhortly follow: then the third and laſt that I am now in hand withall, which concluding with* Palmerin *of* England, *and* Primalion *of* Greece, *their ſeuerall laſt part, will perfect the whole hiſtory, and make it complete in euery part. As the reſt, ſo I commend this to your worſhipfull protection, remaining alwayes yours with my vttermoſt endeuours, and praying that your proſperity may neuer faile.*

Your poore well-willer till death,

To the Reader.

Hen I finiſhed my ſecond part of *Palmerin* of *England*, I promiſed this worke of *Palmerin D' Oliua*, becauſe it depended ſo eſpecially on the other: to diſcharge that debt, for promiſe is no leſſe accounted, with the new yeere I ſend him abroad, a freendly companion for the long euenings, and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But becauſe ſome (perhaps) will make exceptions againſt me, that being but one Booke in other languages, I now deuide it twaine: my aunſwere is, that to glut men with delight, may make them ſutfeit, and ſo in expecting thanks for my paynes, I ſhould remaine condemned by generall miſliking. Beſide, a Booke growing too bigge in quantitie, is profitable neither to the minde nor the purſſe: for that men are now ſo wiſe and the world ſo hard, as they loue not to buye pleaſure at vnreaſonable price. And yet the firſt part will entice them to haue the ſecond, when (it may be alleaged) the coſt is as great, though it had come altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched not ſo much at a little mony, payd at ſeuerall times, as hee doth at once, for this aduantage he hath, in meane time he may imploy halfe his mony on more needfull occaſions, and raiſe ſome benefit toward bying the ſecond part. Againe, the other part will be new at the comming forth, where now it would be ſtale: for ſuch are affections now a daies,

a daies, that a booke a ſennight olde, is ſcant worth the reading. Thus no iniurie is offered by diuiding my Booke, but profit both to you and me: yours I haue rehearſed, and mine is, that a little pauſe doth well in ſo long a labour, beſide, this aduantage would I take, that if my firſt part deſerued no liking, you ſhould neuer be offended by mee with the ſecond.

Yet heerein I am encouraged, that what hath paſt with ſo great applianſe in diuers languages, can hardly merite to be deſpiſed in England, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offenſiue: for noble and Gentle mindes, are farre from iniuring the Hiſtorie, that hath ſo highly pleaſed the Emperours, Kings and mightie potentates, if then the inferiour ſort miſlike, it is becauſe they are not capable of ſo eſpeciall deſeruings.

And yet I am perſwaded, that both one and other will freendly entertaine *Palmerin D' Oliua*, becauſe his Hiſtory is ſo plentifully ſtored with choyſe conceit, varietie of matter and exquiſit conueyaunce: as nothing can be reprooued but my ſimple tranſlation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to tranſlate, allowes little occaſion of fine pen worke.

THE FIRST PART OF THE ANCIENT AND HONOURable Historie of the valiant Prince *Palmerin D' Oliua*, Emperour of Constantinople, Senne to *King* Florendos *of Macedonia, and* the Fayre *Griana*, Daughter to *Remicius*, Emperour of Constantinople: a *History full of singular and courtly recreation.*

CHAP. I.

Of the secret loue that the Prince *Tarisius* bare to the young Princesse *Griana*, & the arriuall of the Prince *Florendos* of Constantinople.

THe ancient Historyes of the famous Emperours of Constantinople doe record, that the eight Emperour succeeding Constantine, the founder of that ancient and famous Citie, was named Remicius, who gouerned so iustly, and with such exceeding honour, as not onely his Subiects intirely loued him, but of the kingdomes about him he was so feared and reuerenced, that his Empire increased more large then in the time of his Predecessors. This Remicius was of such a princely and munificent mind that no Knight whatsoeuer came into his Court, without very

came into his Court, without verie honourable receit and bountifull rewardes: expressing the good nature of a vertuous Prince, whose deedes were helde of no small reckoning amongst the verie enemies. He married with the King of *Hungarias* Daughter, a Princesse for witte and beautie, equall with any of her time, which caused her to be so especialie loued of her Lord the Emperour, as hee altogether gaue ouer ẏ exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not diminish one iote of the former glorie for good and hardie Knights, but dailie increased in such sort, as he tooke great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, nurtered and educated from their verie infancie in his Pallace, especially after the Empresse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose birth was no little reioycing through the whole Emplie. Within two yeeres after, she was likewise deliuered of a goodlie Daughter named Griana, who growing to fouretéene yéeres of age, was of such rare beautie and singular good grace, as those that be helde her, estéemed her for the chiefest peece of workmanshippe that euer nature framed.

Heereupon it chaunced, that Tarisius Sonne to the King of *Hungaria* (who had béene brought vp in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceite of the young Princesse, as hée deuoted himselfe onely to her seruice; béeing vnable to conceale ẏ obiect of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Manie meanes he found to entise her good opinion towards him, but she carrying a religious zeale to loue in some other climate, made no reckoning of his importunate and dilligent seruice, which drew a Hell of tormenting thoughts vppon Tarisius, séeing his sute and seruice so dæplie despised. Neuerthelesse, (to compasse his intent) he desired his Cozin Caniano, to cause a Tryumph bee published whereunto all Knights might be summoned, as well straungers as others: not doubting but hee should spéede so well in dédes of Armes, as thereby hee might deserue the

loue

loue of the faire Griana, and so afterwardes make meanes by the Empresse to demaund her in marriage, all which hee concealed from his Cozin Caniano: who verie gladlie did consent to what Tarisius had requested, watching opportunitie to finde the Emperour his Father at leysure, when he made his highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprise, of himselfe and his Cozin Tarisius, desiring him that all Knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next Moneth appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was verie well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highlie honoured by his demaunde: whereupon he caused Heraulds of Armes presently to bee dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament through al Countries farre and neere. In the meane while Tarisius could not rest day nor night, but still endeuoured to do what he iudged might please the Princesse Griana, to whō as yet he had not vttered the effect of his longing desire, albeit, by exterior actions hee dailie made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had spied her alone from all the other Ladies & Gentlewomen, in a place commodious for a Louers discourses, where falling from one argument to another, the furie of his oppressions imboldened him so far, that at length he brake with her in manner following.

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assemblie, that is appointed at the feaste ensuing, when I hope to receiue the order of Knighthode, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of mee, as to graunt mee one request, easie enough for you to affoord mee, perswade your selfe that I shal imagine my fortune equall with the happiest Knights that euer liued, in that it may be the onelie meane, whereby I shall enioy the prize and honour of the Triumph. Griana knowing assuredlie that Tarisius bare her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this aunswere. In soth Cozin, it would please me meruailous well to bee the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Neuerthe-

nertheleſſe, I haue not learned ſo little modeſty, as to grant any thing before I know what is deſired. When Tariſius vnderſtood her modeſt excuſe, hee perſwaded himſelfe that he ſhould now obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that inſtant hee had liued in deſpaire: whereupon, the teares ſtanding in his eyes, hee beganne in this manner. I humbly beſeech you good Madame, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to ſmother my griefe in ſecret, the extremities of my affection grew to ſuch a ſurplusage, as it brake the ſtrings of my thoughts, almoſt bowed for euer ſilent, to reueale that to you which my ſelfe dare but reuerently thinke, ſuch is my feare to diſpleaſe you, otherwiſe, I know no meane can warrant mee from ſodaine and cruell death: ſo ſetled is the vnſpotted loue I beare you, which when I ſtriue to ouercome, and my ſelfe alſo, the more I would decreaſe it, the more it augmenteth, and that ſo ſtrongly, as while you are in preſence, my ſpirits forſake their euery part of me, to liue in you onely. For which cauſe I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to requeſt you of the Emperour your Father for my Wife, and if hee regard mee with ſo much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my ſelfe likewiſe, the higheſt rome in earthly felicity, hauing a Miſtreſſe of ſuch vnſpeakeable quality. In the meane time, if you pleaſe to beſtowe on mee any iewell or fauour, commaunding mee to weare it as your Knight and Seruant: you ſhall well perceiue how aduenturous loue will bee in defence of my right, by the aduantage I ſhall recouer in the vertue of a gift ſo acceptable.

Griana, who made but ſlender account of his paſſions, and being not well pleaſed that he held her with ſuch vaine diſcourſes: modeſtly returned him this anſwere. If you had ſuch regard of mee as I well deſerue, you would not attempt mee with ſpeeches ſo vnbefitting my hearing: for if your deſire be ſuch as you giue me to vnderſtand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Empreſſe, who haue

greater

greater authoritie ouer me then I haue my selfe. Therefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condition I am content for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, graunting you time and leisure thus priuately to assaile me, for which ouersight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee flong away and left him alone, declaring by her countenaunce to be offended with his request, in that shee desired rather to die then accept him for her Husband, or to allow him the name of a friend. If then Tarisius was driuen into a quandarie, we neede not maruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Empresse Chamber, where she and her Son Caniano stood conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had either receiued some great iniurie, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as he would for the Triumphe, whereupon she left her Son, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him. Nephewe, I see you very melancholy, which makes mee to iudge, that you want some needefull thing for the Tournament, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Taurisius more wistly then shee had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle down his cheekes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word to her. Neuertheless, the Empresse, who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end he disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the answere likewise which shee made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can cease my torments. The Empresse who of her selfe did many times determine to make that marri-

age,

age, (perceyuing now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe, began to resolue on the consummation thereof: and to content her Nephew. in excusing the Princesse Griana, spake as followeth.

Doe you Nephew mislike the answere of my daughter? Beleeue me, therein she did but her duety: for shee cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and vnder controule, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceyue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were giuen to vnderstand by a Messenger, that the Prince Florendos the Kings sonne of Macedon, was newly arriued with a braue company of Knights. But his comming to the Emperour was not as his Vassale or Subiect, because the Kingdome of Macedon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princesse Griana; the renowne of whose Beautie and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her so that for this cause onely he iourneyed to Constantinople, where he was very honorably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne Caniano, as also of the Empresse and fayre Griana, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and esteemed amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

How the Empresse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the marriage of theyr Daughter *Griana* with *Tarisius*, Sonne to the King of *Hungaria*; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.

The Empresse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew Tarisius, but endevored by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leysure, as she might impart the whole vnto him: and because shee had so hardily taken the matter vpon her, shee would gladly it should sort to effect, as commonly Women are coueteous of theyr owne desires: Wherefore no marueil if she were earnest in following her intent.

Some after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smoothly couering the baite she was desirous he should swallow, she desired him to grant her one request, whereof shee would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour neuer before hearing her so importunate, consented at the first to whatsoeuer she demaunded: Now perswading her selfe, to spede, thus she beganne.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter Griana is of yeares and discretion able for a Husband, I am the more desirous to see her honourably bestowed. And for that the young Prince Tarisius hath bene trained vp in your Court, and (which I litle thought) some good will appeareth to betweene them: I should thinke it not amisse to vnite them in Marriage together: for hardlie

lie shall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being heyre apparant to the Crowne and kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they hauing bene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will entertaine a more speciall regard of loue betweene them, then can be in any other that may moue the question to her. Madam (answered the Emperour) shee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you would her good: therefore I like the motion well, for that indeede I esteeme so well of Tarisius, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will forthwith certifie the King his Father by our Ambassadours, that we may vnderstand his opinion herein. The Empresse gratified her Lord with very hearty thankes, being not a little glad shee had so well preuailed, wherefore immediately shee aduertised Tarisius. But for Griana, her affection was else where, for she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as shee beheld him, hearing so great report of his knightly bountie and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and they eyes delinering the good conceit of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightyly mastered her thoughts, as if she consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and hee on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired, should bee knowne betweene them. Yet this hidden fire strone to gaine place of issue: for diuers times the Princesse Griana being amongst her Ladies, talking of such Knights as would shew themselues at the Tournamẽt, the Prince Florendos was commonly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not refraine from changing colour, so that the alteration he found in her spirit might be euidently perceiued, howbeit none of the Ladis as then noted it: and thus shee continued till the feast of Saint Maria d' Augusta, which was the day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Emperour

rour knighted his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse, In honour whereof, hée helde a greater and more magnificent Court, then before times he had done; for he suffered the Ladies to accompany the Knights at the Table: Albeit they were not woont to doo so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sate opposite to the Princesse Griana: During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lookes, and smothered Sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discouered, and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each one preparing for the Tourney, Florendos so well behaued himselfe, as hée found the meanes to speake priuately with his new Friend: and thus he beganne.

Madame, the Heauens haue not a little fauoured mee, in sorting vs so commodiously togither: that I may shew before I enter the Lysts Royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you vpon my Knightly faith, that your gracious selfe was the only cause of my Journey: and while I liue, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your fauour and liking; And the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you would commaund mee this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight: Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that without your regarde, it is vnpossible for mee to doo any thing that can returne mee estimation or honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I should deserue to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I euer desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall doo you honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana, earnestly affected Florendos: Neuertheles, as a modest and well aduised Princesse, doubting least hée feigned those spéeches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answere.

I did not think my Lord Florendos, that you would so farre forget your selfe, to hold mee with speeches not beseeming the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am: Nevertheless, knowing you are a Straunger, and ignorant (it may be) of the modestie which should defend Knights, deuising with Ladies, I will not vse such rigour towards you as I ought, yet must I tell you that I find my selfe offended. You desire that as my Knight you may enter the Tourney: for that I graunt ye, to the ende I may perceiue the effect of the Prowesse, which each one so much commendeth in you, the rest, it is my pleasure that you forbeare.

Madame quoth he; if I haue vsed any such speeches as agree not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse) accuse my small compasse of libertie, which remaineth only at your disposition. What qd. she, thinke you that I will loue any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? Ah sweete Lady said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly desire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind of loue, but only to make you the Mistresse of my selfe, and altogither to dispose of mee and mine: for prowse whereof, I will hereafter implore my selfe in the Emperours seruice, in such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his content. Truely Syr quoth she, that onely appertaines to the Emperour and not to mee, to whome you are to make knowne what you intend: for he hath authority to command, and I am bound by duety to obey. At which wordes the Empresse called her away; when Florendos making her curteous reuerence, departed to his Chamber to Arme himselfe, for many Knightes were entred the Lystes, and he in short space came thither for company: where he behaued himselfe with such valour, as he not onely got the honour of the first day, but of the foure dayes following, while the Tourney endured, and wonne the prize, which Cananio hadde prepared for him that best deserued it, which made him be greatly esteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, especially of the fayre Oriana, whose heart by little

and

and little, Lone brought in subiection, to the no small content of Florendos, which doubtlesse haue the Prince Tarisius beheelde, I imagine hee would haue hardly lyked it. But now during the time of these great Feastes and Triumphes, Fortune the sworne enemie to all quietnesse, presented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these Pastimes and Courtly deuises: For after many of the Knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaue to returne into their Countreyes, Gamezio Sonne to the Soldane of Babylon, who was on the Seas with a mightie Armie, intending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winde and weather, driuen into the Streytes before Constantinople. Which when the Pilotes and Mariners perceyued, not one amongst them but greatly reioyced at this great gaine Fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most noble and flourishing Cittie of the world might fall into his handes: Whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Seas calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he beganne.

My good Friends, I beliue assuredly, that our great gods would not suffer vs to arriue in Alexandria, because wee went against them of our owne Law and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we should addresse our selues to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to ruinate it altogether, or at least to bring it vnder our obeysance. Therefore I am determined at this time, to deferre the reuenge of the iniurie, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in me lyes, employ my forces in conquest of this Countrey: for which cause, I desire that each of you would particularly encourage your people, assuring them (if wee can conquer this Cittie) the Riches thereof will counteruaile theyr paine and trauaile. The Captaines failed not to accomplish their charge to the vttermost, summoning euery one presently to Armes: so prouiding their Shippes, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence,

they hoysed their sayles, making towards the shoare, where with such prouision as they had they toke Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and Clamors, as was heard with no small feare in euery part of the Citie. Neuertheles, they were receiued with better resistance then they looked for, as following the discourse of the History, you shall at large vnderstand.

CHAH. III.

¶ Of the Battell fought before the Citie of *Constantinople*, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of *Gamezio*.

IMmediatly was this huge Armie on the Sea discouered by the Sentinelles of the City, whereupō the rumor arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Panen, where the Moores thought to haue made their first entrie. In the mean while, Caniano, Tarisius, and the other principall Knights with their men of Arms, put themselues in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike maner, as now they marched forth of the Citie, to succour those places where the moores gaue most eager Assault. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, made no little hast to gather his Company: And as he galloped with them by the Emperours Pallace, he espyed the Princesse Griana, standing at her Chamber-window, casting many a ruefull loke towardes the Gates of the Cittie, which so direly pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he saide with himselfe. By Heauen (swete Ladie) either will I dye this

day

day, or remoue the griefe that seemeth so neare to touche you. And with this resolution hee gaue the spurres to his Horse; when it was not long before hee got among the thickest of the Moores, where hee beheld the Enemie so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to proue dangerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best Knighes through all Asia, and that day hee behaued himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as soth to say, they were enforced to retyre towards the Cittie.

Which when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the City, he was not a little grieued to see his men turne their backs on their enemies, & dispose themselues in such fearefull and dismaying sort. But Florendos & the Prince Caniano vsed such meanes, as they got them soone in Aray againe, and returned on the Enemie with a fresh and hardie charge. Tarisius shewed himselfe very valiant, and aduenturous, striuing by all the meanes hee could to equall the Prince Florendos, who that day gaue testimonie of most rare exploits: so these 3. noble Gentlemen past from ranke to ranke, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodily slaughtred on euery side, mating vñ Tarisius, would take reuenge on him, deliuering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sword, as down he fell to the ground so astonished, as his enemy might euen then haue slaine him: and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore aduancing himselfe on his styrops, to reach a full stroke at Tarisius on the ground, lifted him quite out of his Saddle with his Launce, and bare him so rudely therewith to the Earth, as breaking his necke with the fall, he gaue vp the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such hauock of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, fled so fast as they could towards their Ships, when had not the Night too soone preuented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner,

Notwithstanding, the greatest part were put to the sworde, diuers making hast to get away by Boates, were drewned in the Sea, and manie of account brought backe Prisoners; Thus with victorie returned the Emperours power to the Citie.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set saile and returned towards the Soldane, to whome they declared the summe of their mis-fortune, as also the death of his sonne Gamezio; which tidings made him wel-nie mad with rage and anger. But being olde and crazed with sickenes, hee could not goe in person to reuenge his death, which made him vow and sweare, that so sone as his other sonne came to yeares to beare Armes, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easily he should destroy the Emperor and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to redeeme them that were taken prisoners: where we will leaue the Soldane, and returne to Caniana, and the other Princes, who being now come againe to the Citie, the Emperor hauing heard the worthy service Florendos had done that same day (and how he had receiued some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might be to his Pallace, because his owne Chirurgions and Physitians should haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Pallace, and conducted to a Chamber beseeming his estate, where the Empresse Griana came presently to visite him: to whome the Prince Caniano recounted, how Tarisius had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betweene his death and him, but quoth he, the Moore excused Tarisius; for in my presence hee gaue his last farewell to this world, so that now wee may say the Victory is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspence.

While Caniano continued these and such like speeches, Griana cast manie a sweete loke on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his obiect with the selfesame messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their seuerall passions

with

with modeſt and dertuous regard, as none preſent could ſuſpect their ſecret meaning. The Empreſſe and her daughter courteouſly taking theyr leaue, Florendos and his Chyrurgians we leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his woundes, and he the remembrance of his Miſtreſſe to his heart. On the morrow the Emperour with his Nobilitie rode forth of the Citie, to ſee the ſlaughtered bodyes, among whom they found Gamezio, who was eaſily knowne by the richnes of his Armour, which Caniano cauſed to bee taken from the dead bodie, and brought to Florendos, as the deſert of his trauell; when the Emperor himſelfe (the more to honour him) made preſent thereof to Florendos at his returne, with theſe ſpeaches.

My noble Cozen, by your Valour and knightly proweſſe, haue I had the vpper hand of mine Enemyes: may I but liue to requite thy good deſerts, I ſhall account my ſelfe happie and fortunate: Notwithſtanding, account of mee as thy Kinſman and continuall Friend, and be there ought in my power ſhall like thee to demaunde, on the faith of a King I vow to giue it thee.

Florendos moſt humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great honour hee did him, as alſo for his large and bountifull promiſe, whereon he builded ſo aſſuredly, as hee almoſt accounted fayre Griana for his owne: who with the Empreſſe her Mother, came daylie to viſite him, by which meanes theyr mutuall Loue encreaſed more and more, and Florendos recouered his health in the ſhorter time, when he ſollicited the Emperour with this ſute following.

CHAP. III.

¶ How *Florendos* intreated the Emperour, to giue him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answere the Emperour made him.

AFter that Florendos was throughly healed of the woundes which hee had receyued in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leysure, and alone in his Chamber, hee beganne to salute him, as after followeth:

Most dread and soueraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious haue your fauors bene towards mee since first I entred your royall Court, as the King my Father and I shall neuer answere such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnes not to deny mee one requeste, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the princesse Griana your Daughter, whose loue and honorable fame, made me forsake the Realme of Macedon, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceyt, might repute mee worthie of so high a fauour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceyue of mee, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and vnadui sed head, or that I haue enterprized it without the good liking of the K: my Father: I humbly desire your Maiestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little speede thither, and the hope of

yours

yours during my abode heere, hath taught mee to place my Loue with discretion, and continue it with honourable vnspotted loyaltie. With this addition (vnder your Highnes Correction,) that were shee mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithfull seruice of a thankfull sonne, would answer the gentlenes of so good a Father, and the irrenocable voiwes of holy Loue, assure Griana of her Florendo. Right deerly did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had hee bene his own Sonne Caniano: his knightly valour, and manifold other vertues iustly inducing him thereto: and gladly, hee would haue consented to his requeſt, if his promise made vnto Tarisius did not binde him to the contrary: whervpon he returned him this answer. Beleeue me good Cenzin, I am not a little agrieued, that I cannot satisfy your gentle requeſt, for that Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse hath already preuented me: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Embassadeurs comming from Hungaria, to finish the Marriage: so that I had rather loſe the beſt of my Citties, then it should be said I falsifies my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and fauour then hee: yet necessitie is without law, and the regard of mine Honor must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that Hope stroken deade, that had maintained his life, since his comming to Constantinople: and so rapt in the head was hee with the Emperours answere, as hee stoode a good while in a stadie, not speaking a word. At laſt he began thus. God forbid that so great a Prince should breake his promise, by my occasion; Neuertheles, my truth and loyaltie to your Highneſſe shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the moſt forword in duety, of any that owe Seruice and Alleageance to your Maiesty. Neyther will I (saide the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but loue you rather better then I did before. Then entred diuers Noble-men and Gentlemen, which made them breake

off

off from further speaches, and Florendos taking his leaue, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe, and extreame heauynesse, as easily he could haue bene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his Bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his passions, to ease the heauy burthen of his oppressed spirit.

Vnhappy wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withall, seeing the maine that should maintaine the continuance thereof, forbids thee (Fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet gouerned thy Natiuitie? that hee to whome thou ganest life, should this day be cause to ende thine owne. Beleeue me, Tarisius, had I made triall of this inconuenience before, hardly should I put my person in such daunger amongst the Moores, to shelde thy life: but in defending the sword out of thy throat, I haue deseruedly thrust it in mine owne: So that by lengthening thy dayes, I haue eyryed mine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cruell, as no enemie whatsoeuer would wish to another. But were it not that my duety to the good Emperour, countermandeth me, thou couldst not with such ease eyther out-braue me in my loue, or thus vsurpe the gracious fauour of my Mistresse Griana, were affection ballanced with desert, or loue measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithstanding, to dye for her loue, I shall account my selfe happie, in that she cannot but pitty my vnfortunate death, and my spirit shall passe with greater quiet to his ende, if shee knew with what content I take my Destinie: but faire Griana, would God I had eyther not seen thee at all, or else that Fortune had bin more fauourable to mee in my choyse. At which words, the extremitie of his passions tooke away the libertie of his speech: so that hee could not finish, what hee would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoune, amazed one of his Esquyres, that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ran in immediately, where seeing his Maister lying dead (in his iudgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Cozin to Florendos, and one that knew

knew most of his priuate affayres: notwithstanding, hee was ignorant in the cause of this Accident, who taking him vppe in his armes, with colde water and vineger cast in his face, at length hee got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his eyes, and seeing his Cousin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes, saide. My deare Friend and Cousin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for seeing out of all hope to recouer my Lady Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life.

When Frenato heard these words, hee doubted that the Prince had receyued some contrary answere from the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage betweene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely, hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: wherefore he perceyuing that shee must bee the onely meane to ease his torment, hee began thus roundly to answere the Prince. And what of this? must you therefore dispayre? Alas saide Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? the Emperour hath long since past his promise for euer to Tarisius, as his Highnesse assured mee by his owne words. Very well Sir (answered Frenato,) but doe you know if she haue giuen her consent? I promise you, I am perswaded that she loues him not, but that her fauorable regard is much more towards you then him: and because you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter so, that (if I can) I will discouer the Emperours intent towards Tarisius. Do you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and shew not your selfe mal-content, for any thing that hath beene saide: but be of good cheere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeauours. These and such like perswasions Frenato vsed to the Prince, whome he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner. All this while the Emperour bethought him on the speaches that had passed between him and Florendos, which made him the night following, to discourse thereon with the Empresse, and perswading her, that shee could more willingly accept of him

for

for his Sonne then Tarisius. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, reproued his opinion with many Answeres, so that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other subtill fetches, which Women are wont to vse to accomplish their desires, shee so farre disswaded the Emperour, hee promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whome hee first past his word. Of which words, the Empresse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night shee deuised, by what meanes she might from that time forward so much as lay in her to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter: where vpon she daily kept her Chamber of presence, and helde a more strict lookes on Griana, then before shee had done, which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physitions could not deliuer the cause of his sicknes, to the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especially of Caniano. Yet for all this would not the Empresse at any time visite him, because shee would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembring what speeches had past betweene him and the Emperour. And albeit Griana made no outward shewe thereof, yet in her heart shee was highly displeased at her Mothers dealings: so that one day, when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount vnto her in what extremitie he hadde left his friendly Companion, and what griefe it would bee to him if hee dyed, as he greatly doubted: What my Lord (qd. shee) it is not so I hope? Yea certain (qd. hee) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which words, the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as she could, shee dissembled her passions: Neuertheless, shee could not hold it in, but saide, I marueil much that the Empresse my Mother, makes so slender account of him, as since his sickneese she would not vouchsafe once to visite him: I feare she hath forgotten what good he did for vs, that day when hee valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Beliue mee (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorrie for his sickenes: for if hee dye (as God forbid

quoth

quoth she secretly, the Emperour my Father shall lose more then he thinketh on: the great seruice he hath done for him already, may giue instance of my wordes, and he being the Sonne of so great a Prince as he is. By this time hadde such extreame griefe ouerburdened her heart, as shee was constrained (feigning to goe to the Empresse Chamber) to leaue her Brother, that she might alone by her selfe bemoane her Friends hard fortune.

CHAP. V

¶ How *Griana*, sent a Ring to the Prince *Florendos*, by *Cardian* her Mayde, desiring him (as he loued her) to comfort himselfe; And of the answere he sent her.

SOone as Griana had left her Brother, she went into her chamber, where more and more shee lamented for the sickneffe of Florendos, and with her teares shee coupled these discourses. May it be that any liuing creature can deserue so grieuous punishment as I doe, that endanger the life of the worthiest Knight in the world? Unhappy that I am, that Loue, yea, the loue he beares to me, should bring so braue a Gentleman to so hard an exigent: but if hee die, such iust vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as I will not remaine one houre aliue after him, and let our Ghoules seeke their owne quiet in death, that Fortune would not afford vs in life. Yet will I thus farre first aduenture, and that before any sleepe enter these eies of mine, trie if it consist in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my loue at too deare a price, And in this anguish of minde, she called one of her

her Damosels, the Daughter of her Nurse named Cardina, whom above the rest she trusted most, and to her she began in manner following. Cardina, thou knowest the love I always bare thy Mother, and for her sake how well I have thought of thee, I have knowne thee long time a true and faithfull Seruant: but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnes thy loyaltie to me, onely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my life and honour into thy secrecie.

Cardina, who was wise, and of good gouernement, hearing Griana vse such earnest speeches, imagined that she would commit no common matter to her trust with such coniuration, whereupon shee modestlie returned this answere. Madame, rather had I be torne peecemeale in sunder, then any thing you commaund for secrete, should by me bee reuealed without your licence: and so assure your selfe, that while I liue, you shall finde mee as faithfull in deede, as I promise in word. I neuer hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had other opinion of thee: Listen now therefore what I shall commaund thee. I haue vnderstood for certaine Cardina, that the greeuous sickenesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by verie earnest love which he beares to me, and for I account it great pittie to lose so great a Knight, do so much as take the paines to go to him from mee: and saye I desire him to bee of good cheere, and if there bee any thing in my power may do him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as shee that loues him as her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say I send him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my loue. Madame, answered Cardina, Fortune speede me so well, as my paines may giue ease to both your passions: and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no Knight so worthy of your love as Florendos. Go then saide Griana, and returne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance whereof, shee meete the Prince Caniano so heauye and pensiue as might be, because he

he perceyued his Frend to consume alwaye euerie day more and more, But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be seene of Caniano; who beeing gone, she got vp to the Chamber, where when shee was ready to enter, shee heard the Prince complaine in this sort.

Ah poore wretch, must thou needes die without any hope of remedie? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after shee had saluted him, saide to him secretly, that the Princesse Griana had sent her to him, to vnderstand of his health: and beleeue me good Prince, quoth shee, I neuer saw Ladie so sorrowfull for your sickenesse, as she is. She commendeth her selfe to your honor most heartily, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the loue shee beares you: desiring you to be of good cheere, and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conferre with you, of matters which concerne you both nearely. These words so rauished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whither hee dreamed, or that he might giue credite to what he heard: For albeit he knew the messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could he not perswade himselfe that hee was so Fortunate. At length betweene hope and despaire hee toke the Ring, which hee entertained, with many deuout kisses: and embracing Cardina so well as he could, thus answered: Alas my sweete Friend, may it bee possible that any Ladie hath such regard of him, who neuer was able to doe her any seruice? Doubt not therefore my Lord (answered Cardina:) and if you will declare your loue answerable to hers in vertue, you must giue testimony thereof, by comforting your person, that shee may see you so soone as may bee. Ah faire Virgin (quoth hee) let my whole life be employed, in what shall like her Diuine nature to commaund mee: and I assure you, that these tydings hath breathed such newe life into my soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully chaunged; Yea, and that in such sorte, as before three dayes be ouer-past, I shal attend her most gracious will, with seruiceable diligence. In the mean while, I shall

desire

desire you sayde Friend, to let my soueraigne Mistresse vnderstand, that I kisse her Highnes hand in humble dutie, and had ere this giuen Farewell to this life, had not her swéete regard called mee againe from death. Thus parted Cardian from the Prince, taking her way spédily towards Griana, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

CHAP. VI.

¶ How *Cardian* recited to the *Princesse Griana*, what speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; and of the counsell shee gaue her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recouered.

CArdian thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little hasts towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceyued Cardina to enter, but shée demaunded if Florendos receyued her Token in good parte or no. Beleeue mée Madame answered Cardina, I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to do at this instant; for in my iudgement you haue performed a myracle, in giuing him life that was in the very Jawes of death. Then from point to point she recounted the talke passed betwéene them: First, how shee found him in the middest of his regrets, and lastly, what message hée had sent her.

Thus while Cardian continued her discourse, euery word tooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded her

her with such pittifull regarde of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardly, shee shadowed with modestie, as loath to receyue shame in her Loue, hauing carryed herselfe with such honour all her life, quoth shee to Cardina. How might I (good Seruant) ease this weightie oppression? Very well (said Cardina,) when Fortune alloweth opportunitie. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princesse as I am, to bee seene secret with so braue a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and honour. As for that Madame, (saide Cardina,) my Sister can better auuise you then I, or any that I know: by her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the brauest Gentleman in the world, & one whome I know is so farre deuoted yours, as he will rather loose his deerest life, then impeach your honour any way: and otherwise then in loyaltie, to make you his Lady and Wife, I am well assured hee loueth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina, (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as hee is well recouered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may safely aduenture: and desire him as hee loueth mee, that it may be with all conuenient speede.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: Who hartened himselfe so well vpon these speeches, as within sixe dayes he found himselfe throughly amended, wherof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne was not a little glad: but Tarisius was scant well pleased thereat, for hee had conceyued a secret iealousie, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her maid Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following, hee should come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would hee and she conferre of their loue, without suspition of any. Florendos seeing these affaire, forte to so good ende, purposed what euer happened, not to faile the time and place: which made him thinke this day a yeare in length, so long hee looked and desired for the night. But now the wished houre is come,

when Florendos with his Cozin Frenato, (who was priuy to the Princes secret loue) departed from their Lodgings, and comming to the Garden, they saw the Wall was very high, and hard to climbe, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Louers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place wher Griana staied his comming, who had no body with her, but Lerina, sister to Cardina, to whom likewise shee throughly bewrayed her secrets. Shee hauing espyed them, came and fell on his knee before the Princesse, but shee toke him vppe in her armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina withdrew herselfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of griefe, which ouercame her, in that shee wanted a Friende to participate with her in loue, as her Mistresse had, before whom Florendos, being on his knee, saide. Madame, by vertue of your commaundement, I am thus bolde to enter your presence, yeelding my whole abilitie to you, as to the diuine Goddesse that hath sheelded mee from death: which grace seeing your Princely nature hath affoorded mee, my life for euer hereafter remaines at your soueraigne pleasure: the vnfeigned promise whereof, I binde to you by irreuocable bowes, but especially by my faith, the onely ornament of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breathe this ayre, then to honour your name with my continual seruice: for life without your grace and fauour, is more irkesome to mee then a thousand deaths. But by your fauour my Lord (answered Griana) how, or from whence hath this hot loue sprung, let me know I desire you. Madame (quoth hee) as I haue heeretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Countrey of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excelling beautie, at which very instant, I dedicated my selfe onely yours: and euer since continuing in this religious seruice, I haue so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweete selfe, as being yours in seruice, I liue: if otherwise,

I die. In soth said the Princesse, I see then you haue giuen your selfe wholly mine, and so I am now contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this diuine fauour you haue done me, let me intreate to kisse those sweete Lippes that deliuered the sentence I haue long looked for. Which to graunt, though for modesty sake, at first she seemed daintie, yet at length Loue had so surprized her, as he needed not striue when no resistance was offered. Thus with teares and solemne kisses, they breathed into each others soule the mute arguments of their Loue, and fayre Cynthia, amiably fauouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this louely Champion, as breaking the Launce in the face of Venus, hee bequeathed the successe of his deuoire to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweete loue speeches, hee discoursed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in marriage, and how hee excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the daylie and earnest perswasions of the Empresse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented thereunto, I hope they shall finde themselues farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princesse, shee neuer knew that Tarisius had laboured to haue her to his Wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather die then consent thereto: whereupon shee returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredite will it be to her, to procure my marriage against my will, for neuer shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your aduise, how I may preuent this insuing daunger?

Madame answered Florendos, my aduise is layd already, so please you to accept thereof, I will conney you hence secretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, into my countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertaine you with great and reuerend honour, and you shall be our gracious Ladie and Princesse. Beleeue me sayd shee,

it is doubtfull in such a iourney what daungers may happen, notwithstanding, hauing vowed my selfe onely yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I haue rather breake through the straightes of a greater hazard, then be forced to marrie him, whome while I liue I cannot like: therefore doe you expect the aduantage of the time, and I will aduenture with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see atteined ere three dayes be past: in the meane while I entend to take my leaue of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commaundeth my returne home: for which cause I will send my traine before, reteining onely but tenne of my best Knights to accompanie me. For that (quoth Griana) do what you thinke best, & without any further expecting me in this place, certifie mee how things happen by your Cozen Frenato, or my maide Cardina. But now you see the day beginnes to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspition arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand though longer hee would haue stayed, humbly toke his leaue, and by the helpe of Lerina, hee got ouer the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his comming, to whome when, he was entred his lodging, hee imparted the appointment betweene him and the Princesse, desiring him to discharge his traine, except ten of his best appointed Knights, to helpe him if any hinderance preuented his intent: as for the rest, they should be going on before, and stay his comming at an appointed place, three dates iourney frō Constantinople. In the morning he awaited the Emperors comming abroade, to whom he said, that he had receiued Letters from the king his Father, with expresse commeundement to make spéede returne home: therefore my good Lord (sayd hee) I desire to depart with your fauourable liking, and in respect I may not contrary where I am bound to obey, I intend to morrow to set forward on my iourney; assuring your highnesse,

hat

that in what place I shall chaunce to come, I am yours in loyall and faithfull seruice. My good Cozin (aunswered the Emperour,) I giue you thankes with all my heart, for the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence: and if you haue occasion to vse mee in ought, you shall perceyue how highly I loue and esteeme of you. My Lord (saide Florendos) I desire to deserue the great kindenesse I haue found already: So taking his leaue, the Emperour embraced him, and as he issued forth to his chamber, he met the Prince Caniano, of whom he toke his leaue likewise; who desired him to staye three or foure dayes longer. In which time there came to the Court certaine Ambassadors, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the Marriage betweene his Sonne Tarisius, and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay beeing the chiefe of this Embassage: Who was accompanied with many Knightes and Gentlemen of name and account, to whome the Empresse gaue very gracious Welcom, in that she had priuately procured this their comming. As these Embassadours entred the great Chamber, Caniano and Tarisius who accompanyed them, perceyued Griana to withdrawe herselfe aside, very sad and melancholie: Whereupon Caniano came vnto her (greatly abashed at her angry countenance) and thus he beganne. Faire Sister, now at this time when you ought to shew the most chearefull countenance, you are more sadde then of long time I haue seene you: Mee thinkes you haue good occasion to be merrie, seeing the Emperour my Father hath prouided you so braue and worthie a Husbande, as is my Cozine the Prince Tarisius, who I am sure loues you as his owne life. Ah Brother (qd. she) I know not what should moue him so to do, seeing I neuer thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne death, then be constrained to loue where I cannot. These Words did Tarisius easily vnderstand: notwithstanding he made shewe as though he did not: but going to the Empresse hee desired her to stay there with the Emperor, seeing the Ambassadors were come

from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Griana, might now bee finished according to his promise. Upon this occasion, the Empresse called Griana aside, and with smooth and sweete speeches began to breake with her, how for her good she had induced the Emperour, to giue her in marriage to her Cozin Tarisius, and what honourable aduantage shee should receiue thereby: wherefore sayde daughter (sayde shee) resolue your selfe with childlike obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents haue determined. All these perswasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but shee excused her selfe still, by the desire shee had to remaine as shee was, and rather then to marry shee would take a religious life vpon her: with which words she brake into such teares, as the Empresse was constrained to leaue her alone, not doubting to find her the next time in better tune. Griana then considering with her selfe, how she should at length be inforced to yeeld, whether she would or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his enterprise: called Cardina vnto her, and sent her with this charge to Florendos, that that present night hee should not fayle to meet her in the Garden, where shee would be ready to depart with him, otherwise he should neuer gaine the like opportunity: with which message Cardina departed.

CHAP

CHAP. VII.

How Florendos came that night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Griana had intended, and what hapned to them.

FLorendos vnderſtanding the will of his Miſtreſſe, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leaue at the Court, fained hee would returne no more, but take his way ſtraight towards Macedon. Tariſius, whoſe iealouſie increaſed euery day more and more, ſet priuy ſpies to watch euery night, who went in and out at the Princes Chamber, and albeit of long time his labours were fruſtrate, yet at length he and his ſpies perceyued, how hee whom hee moſt enuied, mounted the Garden Wall where the Princeſſe lay: for Florendos hauing left his company without the City, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, hee priuily returned againe to the Pallace, thinking about midnight to carry her away, for whoſe loue hee had thruſt himſelfe into this dangerous hazard. Thus hauing left their horſes without the City with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vp. Tariſius and his men, who vnhappily lay there in ambuſh, ran violently vpon him, crying all alounde, kill, kill theſe villaines that would diſhonour the Emperours Pallace. At which words, Florendos and Frenato ſeeing themſelues diſcouered, preſently drew their ſwords, and beganne to lay aboute them very valiantly: Florendos giuing

Tarisius so great a blowe on the head, that hee fell downe to ground as hee had bene dead, and two or three of his companie with him: Which when the rest beheld, they gote over the Wall, and running with great clamor into the Cittie, cryed, helpe, helpe, Tarisius, whome Florendos (seeking to robbe the Emperours Pallace) hath cruelly murthered.

This noyse was heard by Griana, Lerina, and Cardina: who were in the Garden staying for Florendos: Which did so amaze the hardiest of the three, as they knew not well what countenance to set on the matter: especially Griana: Whom this feare had stroken into a dead Traunce, but Lerina, and her Sister, taking her up in their armes, conveyed her into her Chamber, and sone after into her Bed, when recovering her selfe, in extreame weeping, thus spake. Alas miserable wretch that I am, doth Fortune employ all meanes shee can for my destruction? Well, let her bee the uttermost spight she can: For I am well assured before it be long, that Death shall triumph above all her discourtesies. Cardina seeing her so Wape, and wring her handes, and as it were readie to fall into dispaire, beganne to perswade her in this sorte, Madame, it is no time now to use these extremities, for Gods sake learne to cover your Passions, to the end the Emperour may not detect us, being assured, that as yet wee were not perceived: And if you can but content your selfe, all this tumult will sone be overcome. I pray thee (quoth Griana) leave me alone, and goe see (if thou canst,) What is become of Florendos: that I may know whether he be taken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst others, as one that knew nothing, beheld all. During this hote Tumult, Frenato seeing troubles increasing more and more, followed the matter with such diligence, as hee gote Florendos out of the throng, and the darknes of the Night was such, as they easily compassed to get out of the Cittie, where their Wages staied with their Horses, whereon they mounted, & set on away. But the Prince Florendos would manytimes have returned backe againe, so loath was he to leave

leaue her whom hée loued so dérely: for being out of al hope to sée her againe, hée estéemed his life of no value or account. In which impatience, he rent his comely locks ef haire, and haled his flesh with great violence, whereupon Prenato thus spake to him. Why how now my Lord: will you in séeking honour, wound your selfe with shami: or in arguing your loue to your Lady, endaunger her life? desire you to lóse your felfe, and her also for euer? Beléeue me Cozen, this very hardly besémes you, that the subtill dealing of a cowardly Knight, should make you thus to forget your self. No no good Cozen, it is now no time to declare these shewes: let vs therefore make spéede to our companie, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie, to vnderstand the end of this troublesome broyle, and we in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah swéete Coozin (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torments: thinke you it it possible for me to liue, leauing that rare creature in such perrill, for whose lone a Hell of gréefes hath martired my soule? By my Knightly faith I sweare, that death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be maistered by this one conceit, that I should liue an houre out of her gracious seruice. Well well Syr (said Frenato) what you may not doo now, referre till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the day-light descry vs: otherwise, in séeking to defend Griana, your selfe shall be witnes of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiuing his Coozin did aduise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: so giuing the spurres to theyr Horses, stayed not till they ouertooke ẏ rest of theyr company; when he dispatched an Esquire present lie backe to the Cittie, commaunding him straightly to direct foone to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of euerie thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returne where before we left, Garidian had not long stayed in this hurlye burly but shée perceiued the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to

arme

armes themselues to helpe Tarisius: for by this time had the two knights which escaped, aduertised in ỳ court, that they tooke Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to go to dishonour the Princesse Griana. At which report the Emperour was so moued, as he wēt in great furie to his daughters Chamber, whom he found in her bed, more likelie to die then liue: but necessitie (whereof many do often make a vertue) made her couer her weakenes with a faire show of courage, so that when she sée him enter, she wrapped her selfe in her night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this furious manner. Thou leud Gyrle, darest thou conceiue the thought to do me this dishonor? By my crowne, for this thy presumption, I shall make thée such an example to all other, as thy head from thy shoulders will scant quite thy fault.

Griana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly. My Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, & I know not whereof: if I haue done euill, it is in you to chastise me as you shall please: and if I be innocent, vouchsafe god Father not to condemne mee. Ah varlet (quoth hée) this excuse shall little profite thée. So taking her verie rudelie, he locked her in a strong Tower, whereof he carried the Key himselfe: t'en went hée to Tarisius his lodging, to sée how he did, for it was tolde him that he was in daunger of his life: where he found the Empresse heauily weeping, but he caused her to go to her Chamber, and commaunded his Chirurgions to looke diligentlie to his Nephewe, and not to spare any cost to purchase his health. Now because they which searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruite and rumour was qualified, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the morning, when the Empresse hearing ỳ her daughter was in prison, tooke it very heauily, and kneeling before the Emperour, desiring him that shée might fetch her breath: but he was so angery, as her wordes could do nothing with him, yet hee graunted that shee should go see her,

her, and toke her the Key: when she entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to beholo: but when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reuerence, could not speake, her teares so ouercame her. The Empresse that loued her dearely, seeing her in this greeuous estate, had much adoo to dissemble what shee thought, how be it, after a few light woordes passed betweene them, she said. I am sorrie daughter, that you haue so lightly throwne your affection vppon a Straunger, and that you forget your duetie, in following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knewe the loue Tarisius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (carried away with that lowenesse, which ill agrees with your credite and calling) haue rather thought best, to graunt Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you liue, your honour will be hardlie thought on: for two of Tarisius his Knightes, who thought to take the Traytour, are slayne, and my Nephewe himselfe daungerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Traytour, whome shee so highlie loued, and that shee her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, answered. Madame, and my gratious Mother, as yet I am ignorannt of the cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against mee: and be it for this you speake of, in sothe I am offered very great iniurie, for I knowe not whither Florendos, or any other haue entred my Garden: well I am assured hee came not where I was. These are straunge newes to me Madame, I would rather haue thought him on his way towardes Macedon, in respect of the solemne leaue he toke in the Court. For my part, I would that the Traytour which was the cause heereof, had long since beene buried in the bottome of the Sea, then he should so abuse the honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villanie, wherein I cannot indge him faultie: but were it he Madame, I am at a point, let him die the death, as he hath well deserued, for my dutie to you my Parents

hath

hath taught me better nurture, and loue can be no priuiledge to mee to fiend. Then good Mother, twit not mee with impeach of honour in so innocent a cause, for defence wheereof, were the death present before mine eyes, I haue sorrowed as much as I would, and am more readie to embrace it then liue in suspect, so shall my Father and you be eased of prouiding mee a Husband. As for the prison wherein I am, I will not denie his fauour when it shall please him to deliuer me: but I could take it farre more contentedlie, to spend the remainder of my following dayes thus solitarie, then to liue abroade misnamed on by any. Faire Daughter (said the Empresse) do not discomfort your selfe in this sort, the Emperour haude some reason (in regard of the loue hee beares you, and the outragious tumult which happened) to do as he hath done: but I hope in the end all will sort to the best, and that you your selfe shall remaine contented. Many other speaches passed betweene them, till at length ỳ Empresse left her and departed, for shee thought long till she was with the Emperour, to let him know the talke betweene her and Griana: which shee did without omitting any thing, notwithstanding hee was more seuere to his Daughter euery day after. Then sent hee for the Ambassadours and thus he behaue with them. My Lordes, at this time I am aduised, that you shall returne to your King my Brother, for in respect of the accidents which you haue seene to happen, I will craue pardon for this time, referring matters ouer till some other time, when things shall fall in better disposition. The Ambassadours vnderstanding the Emperours pleasure, the next day tooke theyr leaue toward the King theyr Maister, to whom they declared the whole in generall: whereat hee conceiued such displeasure, as hee presently sent for his Sonne Tarisius, who had not as yet recouered his health. But hee was so enamored on ỳ young Princesse, as would not obey his Fathers commaund: but so soone as he was indifferentlie amended, he intreates the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accu-

sing

sing his owne men, who vndiscretely hadde raysed this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Empresse and her Ladies obtained libertie daylie to accompanie Griana; but all the night time he caused her to be locked vp as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commaunded vpon paine of death, not to be a minute of an houre forth of her companie.

CHAP. VIII.

¶ How *Florendos* arriuing on the Frontiers of *Macedon*, made many sorrowfull complaintes, for not bringing away *Griana*, according to his Enterprise.

NO sooner had Florendos & Frenato ouertane their company, but they ridde on in such hast (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedon. And because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tydings from his Mistresse Griana, hee concluded to rest at the first Towne hee came vnto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople: who returned towards his Maister sooner then hee looked for, by reason of the little abode he made in the Emperours Court; For he stayed not when he heard that Griana was imprisoned, and that Taribus was not slaine, as his Maister was perswaded. These Newes did wonderfully afflict the Prince, as well for the harde vsage of his sweete Friend, as that hee had failed in killing him, by whose death hee well hoped to recouer his losse: all the whole

whole day would be receyue no sustenance, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Beddes as a man halfe desperate. But Frenato, who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his Furie would cause him woorke some violence on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting. Alas sweete Madame, was I borne in such an vnhappie houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me? What satisfaction may your Florendos giue to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer merite to be so harely intreated for him? Beleeue me, could you bee discharged as soone as I could with it, Bolts, Locks, nor Walls could hold you a thought while: yet wishing is not action, euery thing is contrary to me, all helpes refuse me, and death likewise denyes mee: but by my Sworde, (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will deliuer you. Frenato seeing him rise in such a furie, came and toke him by the armes, demaunding what he would haue. Death (qd. he) if I could, for it grieues mee to liue any longer. You speake very wisely (quoth he in mockage) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better shee should be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius? her Captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but insee she marryed she could neuer be recouered. Therefore, let good hope perswade you, and now send an other Messenger with speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents haue happened since, and to practise the meane to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or may bee done in these affayres. This Counsell liked well Florendos, whereupon hee presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the commaund of his Maister; For in good time hee arriued at Constantinople, when Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewomen: which when he heard, he was not a little glad; whereupon he searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, to whome he deliuered his Maisters minde, as also in what sadde and hea-

which shee with all her heart desired, yet doe what iniury to her selfe shee could, shee had better health then shee desired to haue. In the end seeling her selfe so grasse and vnweldie, shee durst not leaue her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the extreme importunity of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarisius: Who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grieuous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, which shee shadowed so well as shee could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your honor and profite, and without any feare (as is thy duety) thou hast boldlie refused the Husband which I haue appointed thee: but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased mee, for wilt thou or not (before I leaue thee) I wil giue thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing Tarisius to come neere, shee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inuiolably, I giue thee here Griana, from henceforth account of her as thy wife: And holde thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well said Griana that perforce shee must obey her Fathers will: wherefore with great wisedome couering her secret thoughts, with extreame teares deliuerad this answere. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I neuer thought that your highnes would vse such cruelty towards me: as to enforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that Tarisius hath much better deserued: but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neere alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betweene the King his father and you, without any such needlesse seeking of newe vniting. And moreouer, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Caniano and me, since our very

youngeſt yeares to this preſent, had beene of ſuch equall and familiar condition: as it ſeemes to mee impoſſible to reuerence him with that intire duety, which women muſt and ought vſe to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perſwade my ſelfe (vnder your correction) that you ſhould ſupport me in this iuſt requeſt: the rather in reſpect of my preſent eſtate, which may induce you ſomwhat to conceiue, that the obſequies of my buriall is more likely to be ſolemnized, then thoſe holy ceremonies that ſhould bee vſed at my marriage. And with theſe words ſhee powred forth ſuch abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to anſwere: but ouercome with pitty, withdrew himſelfe, leauing Tarſius with her: who hoping to haue better words of her, ſayde: Madam, I beſeech you not to offend your ſelfe for any thing the Emperour hath ſaide concerning mee, for I will not any thing to your diſcontent, and rather would I ſuffer all my life, then cauſe the leaſt doubt to incurre your diſlike, hoping that in time to come, you will take ſuch pitty on mee, as being perſwaded of the loue I beare you, and the reuerent deſire I haue to doe you ſeruice, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour ſtriues to gaine perforce, aſſuring you that nothing can bee more grieuous to me, then the hard dealing which hither-to hath beene vſed towards you. And to the end you may reſolue your ſelfe of that I ſay, your Father hauing deliuered mee the Key of your Priſon, and the guarde of your perſon, I here commit both to your gentle pleaſure. So kiſſing the Key, he layd it by her, and without expecting any anſwere, with great reuerence hee departed, leauing her with Tolomeſtra, ſo rapte into a ſlumber or trance as her Keeper would not for pitty trouble her. The Princeſſe in this ſilent paſſion, thought that ſhee ſaw a fierce Lyon before her, with open throate to deuoure her, and neere at hand ſhe eſpied an armed Knight, to whom ſhee laboured for defence, crying, that for Godsſake he would ſhield her from the beaſt: but the Knight with ſterne and angry coun-

countenance thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heauenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy heade from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? content thee, and shrowde thy shame, in regarde of the fruite in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know more of hereafter. If thou doest not, thou diest an euerlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to to accomplish the Emperours commaundement without fayle: wherupon the Knight and the Lion vanished away, leauing her (as shee thought) by a fayre fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersity of flowers, the sweet sent whereof was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the cheerefull blood to reuiue againe in the Princesse, and with breathing forth a vehement sigh shee awaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shee could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or three dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shee shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were deuising together in amorous talke, shee said. Beleeue mee Sir Tarisius, you haue vsed such honest and gentle courtesie towards mee as henceforth I will giue my selfe wholy yours: therefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my Parentes and you: triumph now Tarisius in the honor of my loue. If these words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for ioy whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemne oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistresse, hee brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing

the resolution of his daughter, imbraced her and tok her into as good conceit as euer he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend on her still: wherefore Griana knowing her time to draw neere, and hardly could shee conceale her fortune: after many difficult doubts and feares debated in her thoughts, at last shee imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The olde Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to cover this misaduenture, then to publish that which would displease many, and profite none: so leauing to reprehend when care and comfort was more required, at that instant, the Princesse was delivered of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on munday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princes had her houre of deliverance: When Tolomestra receyuing the Child, saw it so beautifull and well fourmed, as it grieued her meruailously to think what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not bee defended, but by the price of the infants life: wherefore hauing wrapped it in swadling clothes which the Princesse had prepared of some value, shee brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Madam, it much displeaseth mee that we must thus lose this louely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might liue without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princesse) what shall wee doe? Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, & washing his face with flouds of teares, after many sweete kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and must I néeds leaue thee? must the safety of thy life remayne in the mercy of a strange woman, who not knowing thy Parents: may deale with thee discourteously? Well, if thou die, thy mother will not be long after thee. And as shee thus mourned

euer

ouer her infant, ſhe perceyued on his right chaſte a little marke in likeneſſe of a Croſſe: which made her call her viſion to remembraunce, and the woꝛds of the knight, that pꝛomiſed good foꝛtune to the Child: which made her conceiue a cõfoꝛtable hope, whereupon, about his necke ſhe tyed a fayꝛe Crucifixe of golde. Now was the night very farre ſpent, and Tolomeſtra feared they ſhould be pꝛeuented, wherefoꝛe (quoth ſhe) Madam it is time to determine of ſome thing, leaue muſing I pꝛay you any longer on the Child, and let me go carry it to Cardina to be boꝛne foꝛth of the Court. The weeping Mother ſaing ſhee counſelled foꝛ the beſt, foꝛ her laſt adieu ſealed many ſweet kiſſes on the face of the Infant, and ſo in great griefe deliuered it to Tolomeſtra, who went and found Cardina, to whom ſhe gaue it, and ſhe without any tarriance mounted on hoꝛſebacke, & not knowing what way ſhee took, rode on which way foꝛtune guided her. Very doubtfull was ſhee how to be diſcharged of her carriage, foꝛ ſhe feared to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, leaſt ſo the Pꝛinceſſe might be diſcouered: foꝛ that it was commonly blazed thꝛough the Empire, that the Pꝛinceſſe was impꝛiſoned foꝛ the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appeare, when ſhee perceiued her ſelfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke ſet with Palme and Oliue trees: then ſhe alighted from her Hoꝛſe, and made a little bed of ſweet Herbes, wherein ſhe layde the Childe, hoping ſome body would paſſe by, that would take ſome compaſſion on it. So committing the tender infant to the pꝛotection of the powers aboue, ſhe returned to the City in very good time.

CHAP. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the child heard it cry, and brought it home with him to his wife to nourish it.

THe Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princesse yong son, was about a dayes iourney from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where neere at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who hauing the occupation of the ground grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other trees, and like a good husband tee daily followed his affayres, being named Gerrard. His Wife the same morning likewise was deliuered of a Male Child, which being dead borne, caused this good man to walke foorth into his grounds in great heauinesse, for he had but one daughter aged three yeares, and his Sonne would haue beene a great comforte to him. In these melancholique passions, as he went neere the Tree, where Cardina had left the seely Infant, he heard it cry: whereat he greatly marualling, approched nearer, and saw the swete Babie pittifully mourning, wanting the nurture that should comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & seeing it so swet and lonely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead borne: and so ioyfully went home with it to his Wife, who was named Marcella: and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold swete Wife, in the place of your yong dead Sonne, God hath this

day

CHAP. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the child heard it cry, and brought it home with him to his wife to nourish it.

THe Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princesse yong son, was about a iourney from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where neere at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who having the occupation of the ground grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Vine, Date, and other trees, and like a good husband tooke daily following his affayres, being named Gerard. His Wife the same morning likewise was deliuered of a Male Child, which being dead borne, caused this good man to walke foorth into his grounds in great heauinesse, for he had but one daughter aged three yeares, and his Sonne would haue beene a great comforte to him. In these melancholique passions, as he went neere the Tree, where Cardina had left the seely Infant, he heard it cry: whereat he greatly marueiling, approched neerer, and saw the sweete Babie pitifully mourning, wanting the nurture that should comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & seeing it so sweet and lonely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead borne: and so ioyfully went home with it to his Wife, who was named Marcella: and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold sweete Wife, in the place of your yong dead Sonne, God hath this

day

[illegible] him, [illegible] her with all spéede to certi[illegible] thereof, and what seruice shee would com[illegible] him to his Maister. Cardina knowing how glad [illegible] Princesse would be, to heare these tydings from Floren[illegible]os, went to séeke her sister Lerina, to whome shee imparted what you haue heard, and shée, well aduised of the time, and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, vnséene, and not suspected of olde Tolomestra. How soyfull she was of this message I cannot vtter, nor you conceyue, but she was resolued, nener to haue any other Husband but Florendos; and therfore to comfort him, she deuised to write vnto him: that hée might hope as well as shee did: but well shee knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason shee wanted penne, incke, and paper, and shee was forbidden to haue anie. Notwithstanding, shee so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra,) as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) shee recouered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdrawing her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterwards one to Florendos, wherein shee desired him not to bee offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the fauours of Fortune) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had beene vnhappie to them both: Withall, that as hee desired to prolong her life, hee should doo nothing to the preiudice of his own person. These two letters, thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestre, and gaue her that she had writeen to the Emperor, desiring her to carry it presently to his Maiestie: By whose departing, she had opportunitie to conferre with Lerina: in briefe, she desired ta goe séeke the Esquyre, that he might returne to his Maister, with the letter she sent him: which shee did effectually, and the gentle Esquyre made no little haste to his Maister. Who receyuing the Letter from his Mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kist, and rekist it, an hundreth times, thus saying: Ah swéete Letter, written with the hand of the onely fayrest Princesse, this day liuing: And (for her swéet sake will I kéepe thée) as the

best

CHAP. [illegible]

¶ How the Emperour promised *Tarsius* that her should marry *Griana*, whether shee would or not, and how she was deliuered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but olde *Tolomestra*, who had her in guarde.

When the Emperor had receyued the letters which Tolomestra presented him from his Daughter, although he found nothing therein might prouoke him to anger, sauing that shee earnestly desired him to pittie her Estate, being innocent of any thing was layde to her charge: [illegible] himselfe more discontented then before, sending Tolomestra backe with this answer.

[illegible] to Griana, that seeing she was so aduenturous to incur my displeasure, she shall well know that I will not spare to punish her offence: and let her assure her selfe that I will neuer leaue on her while I liue, if shee match not with Tarisius, to whome I haue [illegible]. All this Tolomestra told to Griana: which rather than to obey, she desired to dye.

[illegible] done, [illegible] her, [illegible] as she knew [illegible] happen to [illegible] so weak [illegible] sickly, [illegible] Physitions [illegible] not discerne her disease; but reputed her likely to die,

which

day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine vnder an Olive Tree: and therefore (quoth hee) I pray thee nourish it in steade of thine owne, for a goodlier Childe did I neuer behold. The good Woman tooke it, and vnwrapping the swadling clothes, saw they were rich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifixe which hung about his necke: whereupon shee iudged it of some noble house, and moued with pitty thus sayde. I beleeue sweet Infant, that thy mother is in no small griefe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward shee vsed it so louingly, as euery one thought it to bee Gerrards owne childe: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to be named Palmerin. who grew on in yeares, both in comelie stature and gentle behauiour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband another son whose name was Colmelio, and him did Palmerin loue as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large vnderstand: but here I will craue leaue to pause for a while, and following the intent of this History, you shall vnderstand how Griana gouerned her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana sent for her, to know what shee had done with the Infant: to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it: which grieued her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily she had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence forward shee dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well reclaymed, as the Empresse much reioyced thereat, hoping now to ende the matter for her Nephew Tarsius: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shee tooke occasion to confer with her thus. Daughter, will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I haue long beene impor-

nals for, I pray you hold off no longer, least you driue him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite. When Griana heard her mother speake so gently, & knowing well, (that whither shee would or no) it must serue to the conclusion, shee answered: Madame, you haue thought good (will I, nill I) that I shal be match with your Nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor while I liue shall I conceiue better opinion: if then (my mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out to contrary, that any misaduenture happen by this your wilfulnesse, you may not complaine but of your selfe, being the inuenter and procurer thereof. All these speeches of Griana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Griana was recouered) to end the marriage betweene her Nephew and her: whereto hee gaue such suddaine consent, as before a seuen night was finished, Tarisius and shee were married together, to her great griefe, as her countenance declared; for when euery one were at their feasting, daunting, and other delights, the wofull Princesse thought on the great iniury shee had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most vnhappy on the earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed. Ah my deare friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hearest these tidings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee? What excuse may plead for mee to thee. By good reason may I for euer bee excluded from their company who haue kept their faith inuiolable to their friends, and continue in profession of their vnchangeable affections: for neuer did woman commit such treason as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull heart may giue euident witnesse, which shall bee thine while it remaines in this miserable body, which Tarisius must now haue, though in iustice it be thine. And in this sort continued her dolorous complaints till night approched, when shee must yeeld that honor to Tarisius, which with better will shee could haue afforded Florendos.

At the

After the feastes and triumphes of the marriage were finished, Griana desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grieuous to her: desired Tarisius to make short his state, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conueyed, as beseemed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her sorrowfullie weeping: which when Griana beheld, she said. Madame, I am abashed to see what heauines you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue bene so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for euer from you and your Countrie: why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her vnfortunate while she liues? I heartilie desire the heauens to pardon you, and that the first newes, hereafter you shall heare of me, may be the true report of my death. This said, she mounted on horsebacke, and without any semblaunce to take her leaue of her Father: so being honourablie accompanied, in short time she arriued in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose loue to her so behementlie increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the paragon among all Ladies. Soone after the aged King died, by which meanes Tarisius came to her Crowne. Griana highlie esteeming such as she brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especiallie Tolomedra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her mind, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of conscience, which dayly touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in deuout orisons: that the heauens would forget her haynous offence.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

How Florendos vnderstood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople, the marriage of Griana and Tarsius: whereat hee conceiued such inward greefe, as he would haue died with extreame sorrow.

All this while cõtinued Florendos on the frontiers betweene Cõstantinople and Macedõ, til at length he heard ỹ Griana was released of her imprisonmẽt: wherof he was so glad, as now he thought to reale more surely thẽ he did before: whereupon he dispatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein hee desired to know, if hx might compasse the meane to come and sx her, and he doubted not to bring her so secretlye on her iourney, and with so good prouision, as before they should bee againe discouered, they would bee safelye arriued in Macedon. But this hope was soone frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the marriage betwixt the Prince and Griana consummated: which hee took so displeasantlie, as without giuing ỹ Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastilie againe to his Lord and Maister. Who being aduertised of his comming, sent for him immediately vnto his Chamber, at whose entrance, the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance: whereupon he demaunded, if Griana were liue, or how she fared? My Lord (qd. he) happie had she beene, if she had died before this time: for I doubt (vnlesse you arme your selfe with

with wonderfull patience) that what is doone will highly endaunger your person. Why (quoth Florendos) what is happened? Trust me my Lord (qd. he) the very worst that can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be doone. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe cruellie against the ground, saying. O my God take pittie on my soule, for my body must nedes suffer mis-fortune. At which wordes hee fell in a sounde, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastily and called Frenato: who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he vsed, in foure and twentie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit neere at hand, whom Florendos made verie much account of: who being come, and applying diuers soueraigne Hearbes to his temples, whereof the olde Father knew well the vertue, at length Florendos recouered his sences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with verie feeble voice he said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele mine ende nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayde the Hermit, what? are you so vnprouided of diuine perswasion, as you will loose both bodie and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? hast thou lived so long, and yet ignoraunt of the inconstancie of Women which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana? Knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the shippe is subiect to all windes, so are their affections to continuall mutabilitie? and knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddainly disswaded from? My Sonne, beleeue my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) neuer seeke in this sort to perswade me, beeing assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus in tearmes disgrace my Ladie: for shee is mine, and Tarisius hath no

right

right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would she neuer haue broken her faith to me: and while I liue Father, none but she can be called the wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mightie King of Macedon. The wilfold Father seing him in choller, and being loth likewise to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in speeches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildly thus spake. Mayde (my Sonne) the hath beene vere to you, and I would your consent in loue had answered your liking: but thus to dispaire, and endaunger your owne life, trust mee it is not well done, therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe, and by your constancie condemne her lightnesse, taking patientlie what hath happened. These and such like good words vsed the old Permet, but Florendos would take no sustenance, neither be removed from this opinion, for fiue days while the old man stayed with him: neither would hee looke cheerefully as hee was wont, but continued euermore sad and melancholique, nor could the King his Father cause him like of any Wife, but onely Griana, for whom continually he neuer left mourning.

CHAP. XII.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange vision, which prouoked him to know whose Son he was: and of the talke which passed betweene him and Dyosena, the daughter of Gerrard.

PAlmerin being now come to the age of fifteene yeeres, nourished in the Mountaine as the Child of Gerrard his supposed Father, well beloued of him and Marcella his wife as their owne Sonne: grew in Nature so tall, comely and well proportioned, as well might

be

he be knowne of noble parentage. For albeit he companied with Gerrards Children, who vsed him after their rusticall capacities: yet hee desired more to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Boares thorowe thicke and thinne, and to keepe Hawkes and dogges, rather then Sheepe and Cattell as the other Children did. In these sports he hadde such wonderfull delight, as oftentimes he would come home very late and sore wearied: but one time among the rest, he came home so overlaboured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a marvailous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. For thought (as hee was pursuing a goodlie Harte thorow a Forest) hee mette with the fayrest Ladie that ever eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodlie Fountaine, and called him vnto her saying.

Be not abashed Palmerin, though I am come frō the furthest parts to find thee in this Country, for I am wel assured that ere manie dayes be past, thy boūtie & prowesse shal make thee renowned throughout the world, for one of the hardiest knights that ever lived. Leave therefore this obscure & rusticall kind of life, & hencefoorth lift thy mind to high occasions which are offered thee: and hereof beleeve me, as shee that loveth thee as her owne life, being devoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnes who hath marked me with thy like Character. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfsame marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from thy Mothers wombe. To which words Palmerin would have answered, but the ladie vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceive what was become of her. Whereupon raising himselfe, and marvailing from whence this occasion should proceed, he admired the beautie of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so lively in his remembrance, as he judged her present before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no es-

teem:

sect: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following, the same Lady that appeared to him in the Forrest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being giuen me onely for the loue of you.

In this sort continued this vision for fourteene or fifteene days following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angrie, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin, that you deferre so long to seeke me out: how you think the promises I haue made you are friuolous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my words) shal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beauties haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou maist be the Lord and possessor of me. Thus departed the Lady, leauing a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the Pastorall life hee led with Gerrard and his familie, seemed the most happiest to him in all the world, not hauing seene any person of greater calling then he. But now new affections so elevated his mind, as he intended to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if shee assure mee to discend of a royall linage, I may well presume she knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else would she not so often induce me to follow my fortune, and the good that is prouided for mee: well might I be accounted a fole, if I would not aduenture on so especiall an occasion, therefore happen what will, I meane to search thorow the whole world till I haue found her, and none but shee shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am discended from so high a place seeing my Father is such a simple Countryman? hath my Mother beene forgetfull of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord hath so become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can)

before

ceſore I depart, and if ſhe will not tell me, I will ſearch for her that ſhall aſſure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his viſions, as from that time he became meruailous penſiue and ſolitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella the end of his deſire, whereof Dyoſena (who loued him decrely) partly aduertiſed him.

You haue heard heeretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Olive Trees, he had a Daughter three yeeres olde, named Dyoſena, indifferent fayre, who as ſhee increaſed in yeares, became ſo amorous of her ſuppoſed brother, that hardly ſhe could diſſemble her affection: notwithſtanding, ſhame and regard locked vppe her lippes, that ſhe durſt not ſpeake what ſhe gladlie would, but ſeeing Palmerin in like ſadneſſe as he was, ſhe imagined that one ſickeneſſe had ſtroken them both, wherefore caſting many doubts as ſhe lay in her bed, in the ſame Chamber her Parentes did, ſhe heard them enter into this diſcourſe. Haue you not ſeene Palmerin (quoth hee) how heauy and ſadde hee hath beene a long time? Yea truelie haue I (qd. ſhee) it may bee that ſome haue told him he is not your Sonne: ſo falling out of one matter into an other, Dyoſena heard them report the maner how they found him, which ſhe deſirous to let Palmerin vnderſtand, aroſe early the next morning, and comming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you knew ſo much as I doe, peraduenture you would be not a little abaſhed.

Why good ſiſter (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderſtād the matter. In ſoth (quoth ſhe) I euer thought til this time, that you had bin mine own natural Brother, but by chaunce hearing ſome talk betweene my father & mother this laſt night, I am no other then your friend, and ſhe ꝑ loues you dearelie: which I haue euermore hetherto feared to let you know, doubting ꝑ neerenes of our cōſanguinitie, which I now perceiue cannot hinder our marriage, if you will requeſt mee of my Father, who I am ſure will not denie you. And ſo ſhe

rehearſed

she rehearsed the manner of his finding, which so well liked Palmerin, as he gaue the more credit to the visions he hadde seene, neuerthelesse, he thus dallied with Dyofena. It may be Sister, you misunderstood our Parents, my selfe will demaund the truth of our mother, if she assure me as you haue doone, then will I talke with them concerning our marriage. So shall you doo well (sayd Diofena) to be thorowlye assured, yet néede you not report mée to haue informed you, least therby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leauing Dyofena, chanced to find his mother Marcella alone, to whom he said. Mother, I beséech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. That will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to doo. Understand then good mother (quoth he) that I haue oftentimes dreamed how I am your son, so that I know not what to say, vnlesse you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was strooken in a studie: but Palmerin was still so importunate, as at last she thus aunswered. In good faith (fayre fréende) I neuer knew thine owne naturall parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou were mine own Sonne: and so what wordes Diofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her chamber, where shée shewed him the costlie swadling clothes that he was found in, & the Crucifixe likewise that hung about his necke, which he intreated her to bestow on him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may kéepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more chéerefull disposition, deuising how he might compasse the meane to go séeke his Fortune, whereto his sundrye apparitions had so often incited him. And as none can shunne what is ordeyned him by diuine prouidence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alone vppon the Mountain he heard a voice cry verye pittifullie for helpe and succour: whereuppon Palmerin ranne that way which hée heard

the

the boyce, where hee beheld a Lion greedily deuouring a Horse. Palmerin hauing no weapon to defend himselfe withall but a staffe, very hardly set vpon the beast, giuing him such a stroake betweene the eyes, as hee fell downe dead to the ground, then comming to him, hee heard complaine, saying: I haue my friend in some part reuenged thy wrong. Alas, Sir (quoth he) and had you not beene, my life had perished, for as I trauelled on my iorney, this Lyon furiously set vpon me to deuoure mee: which the rest of my company perceiuing, tooke themselues to flight, leauing me as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to goe with me, not farre hence where I haue beene nourished, you shall haue the best entertainement that I can make you. My friend (quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will goe with mee into the Country where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to reward your trauell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (sayd Palmerin:) In the City of Hermida (quoth hee) in the Realme of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandize, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this vnlooked for mischance befell me, which had made an end of mee without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the strangers seruants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that hee had left his companions not far off. Returne then (said the Master) and will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to haue my wounds dressed, which the seruant performed immediately, & all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe, if he should thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if hee returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded to depart with the Stranger. So was hee set on a very good palfray, and setting forward to Macedo, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the Stran-

ger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to euery one how by the ayde of Palmerin his life was preserued, for which cause hee accounted of him as his owne Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both hee and his wife the next day searched the mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what euill hee had offered him, that should make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betweene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofera and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Diofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so neere his heart, as hee intended neuer to giue ouer search till hee had found him.

CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Esteban to the City of Hermida, who afterward gaue him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.

Esteban the Marchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arriued in the City of Hermida, where hee was louingly welcommed home by his Wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Country, to whome hee reported his dangerous assault by the Lion, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured:

but

but(quoth he)good fortune sent him at the very instant that slew him,for which I shal be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue,therefore good Wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise,for hee hath well deserued it. This speech had the Merchant with his fayre wife, who embracing Palmerin,sayde: that nature had omitted nothing in her workemanship,making him so nimble,and ful of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a Woman, hauing before spent his time among shepheardes, Swineheards,and loutish Swaines of the Country, with modesty beganne to blush,and was so well stored with ciuility to make her this answere.I desire Mistresse that my behauiour may bee such, as may continue my Maisters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Marchandize,& profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his affayres to Palmerins trust: who rather gaue his mind to martiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the nobleness of his mind,for hee delighted to manage great horses,to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates,to frequent the assembly of Knights,to talke of armes and honourable exploits,and in briefe, to exercise all the braueries of a noble Courtier.

Whereat Estebon maruelled so much, as falling in talk with him,he sayd. We thinks it is strange Palmerin,that thou being the sonne of a drudge, and nourished on the Mountaine of Oliues(as thy selfe hath often tolde me) disdainest the life of a Marchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Launce and shield to enter the combate. Syr (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father bee such as I haue told you,but I wot wel my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to beare Palmerin in these tearmes, because hee perceiued that his Wife fauoured him greatly, whereat hee became a little iealous, and gladly would remoue the occas-

ons, wherefore he said. Seeing it is so Palmerin, that thou hast no mind to follow mine affaires, I am well content thou shalt exercise chiualrie, being the thing thou naturally affectest, and whereby thou mayest attain credit and account. For mine owne part, because I will not hinder so good forwardnesse, thou shalt haue of me money, horse and armour, that thou mayest goe to Macedon to the king, where, if thou request it of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, hee will not refuse to giue thee thy order. Palmerin returned him very hearty thanks, and hauing prouided all things expedient for his iourney, tooke his leaue of the Merchant Esteban and his Wife, hoping to speed well in his aduenturous enterprise.

CHAP. XIIII.

How Palmerin arriued at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receyue the order of Knighthood, at the hand of the Prince Florendos, sonne to the aged King Primalion, by the fauor of the Lady Arismena

Such speede made Palmerin being departed from the Merchant, as on the fourth day following, riding by a riuer side, hee found a Dwarfe sitting heauily weeping, of whom hee demaunded the cause of his mourning. Alas sir (said the dwarfe) as I was riding by the commandement of my master, to a Lady whome hee deerely loueth, a Knight euen now tooke my horse from mee, and very villanously offered mee outrage, which yet doeth no so much grieue mee, (as being thus on foote,) I know

know not how to get ouer the riuer. Mount vppe behinde mee (said Palmerin) and at the first Towne we come to, I will prouide thee of another Horse. Then mounted the Dwarfe vp behind him, and hauing past the riuer, desired to know of Palmerin whether he trauailed: for (quoth he) I neuer saw man whom I had greater desire to serue then you. Dwarfe (sayde Palmerin) I now iourney toward the court of Macedon to the King, where I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one of the worthiest knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receiued your order (said the Dwarfe) I hope you will not be so vnwise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many haue failed and lost their liues. What aduenture is that quoth Palmerin? To go to the Mountaine Artifæria (saide the Dwarfe) in hope to kill the serpent, which hath beene the death of so many valiant knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin, moued them to fight with the Serpent? That I will tell you answered the Dwarfe. The King Primaleon Father to Prince Florendos whom you seeke, three yeares since fell into a very strange disease, for which no remedie can yet be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endeuours of the Queene and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous princesses that euer was heard of, who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best Phisitions in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meanes to recouer his health: yet hitherto all hath beene to no purpose. Whereuppon she sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfullest in the art of Nigromancie this day liuing, who returned this answere: that hee should neuer be healed, except hee be first washed with the water of a Fountaine, which standeth on the top of the Mountaine Artifæria, whither foure times a yeare resort three sisters, Magitians of the Isle Carderia, to gather vertuous Hearbes which there they wash, and where of they frame all their enchauntments. This place is de-

fended by the Monster, whereof I tolde you, that no man as yet durst approach it. Which newes when the Princesse Arismena vnderstoode, hoping by strength of men to recouer the water and vanquish the beast, leauied a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sooner entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiously out of his Denne, throwing fire and smoake out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such terror, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselues to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them paide their liues for their bold attempt. the Mountaine was so stored with Lions, Beares, Wolues, Harts, Tygers, Dunces, and other wilde rauenous Beasts that deuoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselues in this aduenture, thinking by their prowesse to performe more then the other: but all the worse, for not one of them returned backe aliue. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe said *Palmerin*, that is esteemed the most valient knight through al Greece? Alas sir, sayd the Dwarfe, some other matter hath so drowned his mind in melancholie, as he liues like one that despiseth himself. While the dwarfe continued his discourse, the desire of honour and renowne did so liuely touch the spirite of *Palmerin*, as he sayd to himselfe. It may be that Arismena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughtes visited mee so often, if the Destinies haue vowed her mine, why should I feare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarfe dooth so terrifie mee? Haue not I slaine a Lyon already with a staffe? Tush, the more danger is in the place, the more honor depends vpon the victory. If I leaue my life there, I am not the first: If I returne with conquest, I shall be beyond any yet in fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no perill shall dismay mée from giuing the aduenture, whereupon he sayd to the Dwarfe. But tell mée my friend, hee that bringes the water from the mountaine to the King, what aduan-

tage

taze ſhall hée deſerue. My Lord (quoth hee) it hath beene many times publiſhed, that his reward ſhall bee the beſt City in all this Realme. Sée then Dwarfe ſayde Palmerin, one man moze will hazard his life in this enterpzize, albeit I ſhould receiue but thankes foz my trauell, wilt thou goe with mee? That will I (anſwered the Dwarffe) if you pleaſe, and neuer will I forſake you while breath is in my body. Thus ſet they on till they came to the greate City of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in ſuch beauinelle, as hée ſéemed a man of another woꝛld, being accompanied with many Knights, and his fayze ſiſter the Lady Ariſmena, to whome Palmerin boldly addꝛeſſed himſelfe: and as though hee had beene a Courtier all his life time, with ſéemely modeſty he ſet his knée to the ground beforе her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beſéech you to vouchſafe mee one requeſt, which well you may not deny mee, in that I am a Stranger, as alſo in reſpect of the deſire I haue to doe you ſeruice. And truſt mee Sir (quoth ſhee) you ſhall not bee refuſed, what is it you would haue mee to doe foz you? That at your requeſt (ſayd Palmerin) the Pꝛince Florendos your bꝛother, will giue mee my Knighthood. Ariſmena ſéeing Palmerin ſo amiable, and well diſpoſed of body, maruelled of whence hee was, and ſayd. In good ſooth Sir, ſuch matter nothing appertayneth vnto me, for (as I iudge) ſuch a motion ſhould pꝛoceéde from your ſelfe: yet taking him by the hand, ſhee pꝛeſented him to her bꝛother, ſaying. I pꝛay you my Lord graunt to this young Gentleman as yet not Knighted, the thing he hath deſired mee to demaund. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding paſſion, pꝛeſenting ſ Pꝛinceſſe Griana to his thoughts ſuddainely touched him, and being rapt into moze conceite of ioy then he had bæne accuſtomed, demanded of Palmerin if hee would bee made Knight. With right good will my Lord, quoth he, if it ſhall like you to doe me ſo much honoꝛ, foz aboue all things elſe, it is my oneſie deſire. My friend,

ſaid Florendos, it is neceſſarie I ſhould firſt know, whither you be noble borne or no. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I never knew my Father or Mother, nor any of my kindred: notwithſtanding, mine owne heart makes mee iudge no leſſe of my ſelfe, and more gladlie would I die, then do any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthie the name of a Gentleman. And truſt me, ſaid Florendos, I am of the ſame opinion: this night therefore you muſt obſerue the religious watch as is accuſtomed, and to morrow will I giue you your order, and put the ſpurre on your heele my ſelfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kiſſed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke together, Florendos tooke great delight in beholding him, ſo that he demaunded his name and Country. My Lord, quoth he, they which found me amongſt the Palme Trees, on the Mountain of Olives, not farre from Conſtantinople, haue giuen me the name of Palmerin. By mine honour ſayd Florendos, I ought well to know the Citie whereof you ſpeake, as the place wherein my deereſt affections take their firſt life, and not long ſince, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to be diſcharged of the burden.

Thus hauing in his company his vnknowne Sonne, begotten by him on the Princeſſe Griana, knew little that his loue had ſorted to ſuch effect: neuertheleſſe, nature prouoked him to like ſo well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him more then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that fayre Ariſmena interrupted them, aſking Palmerin if he would diſcharge her of the requeſt he demaunded. That do I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious ſeruice: and to begin my ſeruice on your behalfe, ſo ſoone as I haue receiued my Knighthode, I will take my iourney towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that muſt recouer the king your Fathers health. Alas good Sir, quoth ſhe, God forbid that you ſhould fall in ſuch daunger by my meanes. I know well anſwered Palmerin,

merin that I can die but once, and if it be now then am I dispatched, and if I escape, I shall do that whereof many other haue failed, and this is my resolution faire Madame. Beléeue me, said Florendos, me thinks you are as yet too yong, to finish an action wherein consists a great daunger, I pray you therefore referre it vnto such, as haue had more experience in Armes then as yet you haue. My Lord, saide Palmerin, in other matters I shall obey when you commãd, but this I must desire you not to dissuade mée from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will néedes haue it so, I am content, you shall in the meane while kéepe me companie: as for sword and armour, trouble not your selfe to prouide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demaunding of him what things he had séene in Cõstantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Esquire he had to attend on him. Then he shewed his dwarfe named Vrbanillo, such a deformed and euil fauoured fellow, as euery one that saw him laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin said to Florendos. By my faith my Lord, as vnseemely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I should be displeased if hée were any way iniuried. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that hee will stand you in great steade when you haue no need of him, and loke that you leaue nothing behind you, that you neede to fight against the Serpent, and trust it in his discretion to bring after you. When Vrbanillo perceiued euery one iest with him, hee was halfe angry, and in some choler thus sayd to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I line, this little deformed body of mine shall giue you to vnderstand that I beare so good a minde, that where my maister leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can do him no other seruice, hée shall be assured of my truth and loyaltie. Be not offended (Dwarfe my good friend) sayd Florendos, for I thinke well of thee and of thy behauiour. And so because the Tables were couered for Supper,

per, they brake off talke, Palmerin preparing himself to his watchfull deuoire in the Chappell.

CHAP. XV.

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and Sword of Gamezio, whom he slew before Constantinople, and afterward Knighted him: and how a Damosell came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shield.

THe time being come, that Palmerin should performe his deuout watch in the Chappel, before he receiued his knighthood, according to the auncient custome: Florendos gaue commaundement, that the Armour of Gamezio should be brought him, which the Emperour had giuen him, after his conquest of the Soldane of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these hee shewed to Palmerin, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best Knight of his time, whome (neuertheless) I conquered, being then more pleasant, ioyfull, and at better content, then I shall be while I haue a day to liue. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your prowesse, and that these ornaments of defence you will better imploy, then any other, on whome I shall bestow them: I pray you henceforth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, sayde Palmerin, my desire is, that my seruice towards your honour, may bee witnessed in my good imployment of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and diuers o-

ther

ther Knights did helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night hee spent in solemne orizons, that God would endue him wᵗ strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might again receiue his strength:

At the breake of day, as Florendos went to the chappell to giue him his order, there entred among them on the suddaine a comely Damosell, bearing a Helmet & a shielde of azier, the goodliest and most beautifull that euer was seene, vpon his Shield being portrayed a Ladies arme, hauing her hands fast closed together: the Damosell comming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatly amazed at this accident, in that hee had neuer seene the Damosell before: notwithstanding he returned this answere. Faire Damosell, and my Friend, god leaue haue you to say what you please. The comming to Palmerin, and falling on her knees before him, shee sayde. Sir Palmerin, a Knight that hath authority to commaund me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by mee this Helmet and Shield, wherein you shall find the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour proceedeth, it commeth from him who hath proued the effect thereof, and that knowes more of your neerest affaires then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet hee hath neuer seene you. Damosell, sayd Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured mee, whom I may remunerate with my chiefest indeuours hereafter? You cannot as yet know him, saide the Damosell. I pray you faire Virgin, quoth Palmerin; that you will answere on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come heereafter, I remayne ready to doe what likes him to commaund mee. It sufficeth (quoth she) loke that hereafter you remember your promise: Then comming to the Prince Florendos, shee sayd. My Lord, the same Man from whom I haue saluted Palmerin, gaue mee in charge to say, that you

should

shoulo not feare or doubt to dubbe him knight: but to perswade your selfe, that both by father and mother hee is so noble as hee doth well deserue it, and him hereafter you will loue beyond all other, for by him you shall enioy the thing you most esteeme and desire. Thus hauing no longer licence to stay with you, I humble desire you to excuse my departure. Sweete maide, saide Florendos, may your words sort to so good ende, as you haue promised. So departed the Damosell, leauing Palmerin on his knees before the Prince, who taking the sword that sometimes belonged to Gamezio, knighted him saying: And mayst thou prowe as famous and fortunate, as my hope perswades mee thou wilt. Then was hee honourably conueyed to the Pallace, where the faire Arismena vnarmed him and couered him with a rich mantle of white Satten, imbroadered all ouer with sumptuous flowers of gold: beside, no one in the troupe but highly reuerenced him, for the worthie report the Damosell made of him. And albeit the Princesse Arismena disswaded him so well as shee could, that he should not endanger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Brother should ouercome his melancholy, and fearing his losse without hope of recouerie: yet needes would he be gone the same day, but that her importunate intreatie perswaded him to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin beeing sone after alone by himselfe, hee remembred the words of the Damosell, who promised him to finde the secrets of his heart in his sheeld: whereupon he well aduised himselfe, and saw that the hand portraied in his sheeld, had the same marke which the Lady hadde, that appeared to him in his sleepe, whereat not a little marualling, he sayd within himselfe: It must needes bee without all doubt, that hee which sent me this present, knoweth full wel the scope of my fortune, for I am well assured that the Lady which spake to mee in my sleepe, when I abode in the house of my Father Gerrard, shewed me her hand with the selfe same marke I see heere pictured: by which I may perswade my selfe, that thee wil

not

not ceaſe to follow and finde me out, vntill ſuch time as I might ſpeake with her. Whereuppon hee found himſelfe ſo ſodainly inueigled with her loue, as hee thus complained. Ah Palmerin, well maiſt thou ſee that long thou canſt not reſiſt this impreſſion, but whence ſhould this honour proceede? to loue her thou neuer ſaweſt, nor knoweſt where is her abiding? If it fall out that thou dieſt in the purſuite, theſe paſſions ſhall ſoon haue a final end, and I gain ỹ greateſt felicitie that I can deſire. By this time had he ſpent the eight daies, which he promiſed Ariſmena for Florendos cõpanie, when as well to begin the ſearch of her hee loued ſo well: as to ende the aduenture, he intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, prouiding himſelfe a great huge Mace of Iron, which did him good ſeruice, as you ſhall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent of the mountain Artæferia, and ſlew him, bringing the glaſſe filled with the water of the fountaine, whereby King Primaleon of Macedon recouered his health.

EIght daies had Palmerin ſtayed with Florendos, and in company of the fayre Princeſſe Ariſmena, who fearing that hee would neuer returne from the Mountaine Artiſæria, was very penſiue and ſad: and oftentimes ſhee intreated him, not to hazard himſelfe againſt thoſe cruel, ranenous and ſupernaturall Monſters, but rather to witneſſe his

his valour against Knights of account like himselfe, but all her speaches profited not, for he was resolued to depart. I shall yet desire you, said the Princesse, that for my sake you will take with you three Esquires which I will giue you, which may lend you succour if any inconuenience should befall you. Then shee called the Esquires, and presented them vnto him, with the glasse that he should bring the water in from the fountaine, if fortune fauoured him to finish the aduenture. Palmerin mounting on horseback, and Florendos accompanying him halfe a dayes iourney on the way, left him on his iourney towards the Mountaine Artisæria, where he arriued on the last day of Aprill. Then he commaunded the Esquires and his Dwarfe Vrbanillo, to expect his returne at the foote of the Mountaine, for he would suffer none of them to go vppe with him: so ascended he the Hill by a little trackt foote path, with his pron Mace on his necke, and the Glasse for the water fastened to his girdle. Hauing thus trauailed vp till about midday he found the passage so thicke set with trees and brakes, as he was constrained to alight from his Horse, whome he vnbrideled and left there feeding: and much further had hee not gone, but the night ouertooke him, yet did the Moone shine bright and cleare, which made him still trauaile onward, till he beheld the Rocke where the water was, and the Serpents denne, who was come somewhat lower to recreate himselfe among the greene hearbes, where hee had closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin comming he beganne to swell, and writh his tayle together very strangely: all which could not dismay this aduenturous Knight, but commending himselfe to God, sette down his Glasse, and with his Mace marched stoutly against his enemie, saying, Why Palmerin? didst thou so often request of Florendos and the Princesse his sister, to try thy strength against this Diuell, and now thou art come in sight of him, wilt thou faint? Doth it not beseeme the better to die with honour, then to liue with shame? let thy one encou-

rage

CHAP. XVII.

How Palmerin discended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fountaine, and how ioyfull Vrbanillo and the other Esquiers were, seeing their Master returne with so good fortune.

When these three sisters were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little marueilling at that hee had heard & seen, but most of all when he felt his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for: so rendring thanks to heauen for his good successe, hee went vp higher on the mountaine, thinking to see the Fountain, but he could not, wherfore without any longer stay hee discended downe again, thus saying to him selfe. How happy may I count my selfe, to finde so good Fortune in this desolate mountaine: for now I know her name that is destinied to be mine, henceforth shall she not conceale her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and this I vow by him that made mee, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, til I heare some tidings of her: and were it not for the promise I haue made the Princesse Ilismena, to bring her this water to recouer the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appeared to me in my sleepe) hereafter to bee one of the happiest Knights in the world. So walked he on till he came where he left his horse whereon he mounted, and came to Vrbanillo and his other Esquires, who hauing heard the cry of the Serpent, when

Palmerin gaue him his first stroke, perswaded themselues that their Master was slaine: but when they saw him coming, Vrbanillo aboue all the rest was most ioyful, and ran apace to meet him, desiring to know how he had sped. Very well I thank God, said Palmerin, who gaue me strength to kill the Monster, and to bring sufficient of the Water, I hope, to win the King Primaleon his health. Then haue I the thing, I most desire, said Vrbanillo, albeit I greatly feared, that you had accompanied all the other Knights to death, that aduentured before you, and could not speed well. So mounted they all on horsebacke, and made so good iourneyes as they arriued at Macedon, whereof Florendos and fayre Arismena were not a little ioyfull, especially when they were assured, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by meanes whereof it is not to be doubted but if he were highly honoured and receiued at the Court.

CHAP. XVII.

How foure Knights would haue taken the glasse of sustall water from Vrbanillo, before Palmerin arriued at Macedon, and of the Combate betweene them.

YOu must here vnderstand that the same day Palmerin, in company of his Squire departed from the mountaine, hee sent Vrbanillo the Dwarffe before, towards Macedon with the glasse of water: who so fortuned that foure Knights met with him, one of them saluting him in these hard termes. Deformed villaine, giue me that glasse or I shall take thy head from thy shoulders. Palmerin, who came

came not farre behinde, seeing the Knights offer iniury to his Dwarffe, gaue spurres to his horse, and thus answered: How how Gentlemen? are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my seruant, trust me, I neyther can nor will so put it vp: and so couching his Lance, he encountred one of them soroughly, as he fell from his horse deade to the grounde. When the other two saw their companion thus foiled, they together set vpon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soone vanquished, and the third took him to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leauing them rode on his way, his Dwarfe thus comming to him: Beleeue mee my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted ouer foolish hardy, that at the weapons point takes to offend you: I dare boldly affirme my woordes, by euidence of the fortune of these foure knights.

In that, said Palmerin thou maiest be deceyued, but God is alwayes friend to iustice and equity, and enemy to such as go against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these foure knights would haue taken the glasse from Vrbanillo, you must note that they were all Seruants to a great Lord of a Castle, which was a dayes iourney off the Mountaine Artaxia, who hauing intelligence by Shepheards and other peasants, what good fortune had befallen Palmerin to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fatall water, repined greatly thereat: for the Lord did beare malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrender a Seignour, which he against all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recouer his health, he sent his foure sonnes to take it from Palmerin, whose successe in their attempt fell out as you haue heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whom with great reuerence he saluted on his knee, whereat the King embracing him so well as he could, sayd. Trust me my good Friend, next to God I must esteeme you dearest, for

that as hee by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre, though weake and sickly: by diuine prouidence hee hath sent you to restore my bodily health, from henceforth therefore I shall intreate you to commaund mee and mine at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayde Palmerin, the heauens giue vs successe to doe you seruice, for I know no Prince liuing this day, for whom I would more gladly aduenture my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but the griefe I haue sustained for the sorrow of my sonne Florendos, brought mee into such a long and lingering extreamity, as well may I bleese the time, that by your good successe am so happily deliuered; let mee therefore entertayne you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a Father, who will loue you as if you were his own naturall childe, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall be at your disposition. Worthy Sir, sayd Palmerin, worthily might I be reputed a man of the worst in the world, refusing the honour you please to offer mee, especially in such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (beeing thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient being furnished with Horse and Armour to do mee seruice. With these words the King embraced him, and meere ioy causes the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: so that Palmerin stayed longer with him then he made account to do, till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

Chap.

CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Aſtor of Durace ſent to the King of Macedon, deſiring him to ſend him the Knight that had ſlaine the Serpent on the Mountain Artiſæria, to ayde him againſt the Counte Paſſaco of Mecæna, who layde ſiege to one of his Cities.

SO farre was ſpread the fame of this victorie, which Palmerin had againſt the Serpent, on the Mountaine Artiſæria, as at length the Duke Aſtor of Durace heard thereof, againſt whome the Count Paſſaco of Mecæna waged battaile, and ſeing himſelfe vnable to reſiſt his enemie, minded to ſend to the King of Macedon, requiring ayd of the knight ẏ ſlew the Serpẽt at the inchaunted Fountaine: and hereuppon he diſpatched one of his Gentlemen towardes the King, who made good haſte till he came thither: when doing his reuerence, and deliuering his Letters of credit to the King, he ſaide. Dreade Lord, the Duke of Durace my maiſter moſt humbly ſalutes your Maieſtie by me. The King hauing read the Letters, and noting the contents, bad the Meſſenger diſcharge the reſt of his meſſage. It is ſo Sir, ſaid the Gentleman, that of long time my Lord and maiſter hath bene aſſaulted by the Count Paſſaco, who in ſuch cruell ſorte hath warred on him, as he hath well nere deſtroyed the whole Countrey, for hee hath taken the Cittie of Mizzara, and againſt all right doth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke my maiſter raiſing his ſiege to bid him battaile, Fortune

hath beene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes are slaine, and ỳ greater part of his worthiest Gentlemen. Yet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him still to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begirt with siege so strongly, as he is doubtfull ofs further daunger. But within these eight dayes he understood that your highnesse hath here a Knight, that slew the Serpent on the enchaunted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord repeseth such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many hardie men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enioyne the Counte to leaue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth expedition, he desires your assistance with all possible spede. I am sorrie, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as yet to part with *Palmerin*: but seing the necessitie is so vrgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and so many approued Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towardes my Nephew. Now was *Palmerin* present when the Gentleman deliuered his message, which pleased him not a little, because hee would gladlie leaue the King to follow his fortune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate requestes: but seing the King had graunted to send him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, using these speeches. In respect of my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath vrgent occasion to imploy me, and in that his suite is onely for me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so good, in a cause of truth and right, that woe shall be sufficient there to ende the controuersie. Not so my good friend *Palmerin*, saide the King you shall not hazarde your selfe alone, but take such company as I shall lend with you. Sir Lord, quoth *Palmerin*, hee demaundes mee without any other company, and therefore let mee perswade you to satisfie your request: so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set forward,

ward, for he was readie. Worthie Sir, aunswered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was Knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you are. This suddaine resolution of *Palmerin* displeased Florendos; wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my dere freende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your companie hath giuen mee greater solace & delight, then any thing else since I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of your honour such, ẏ I feare more to heare your misfortune, then I pittie ẏ necessitie of my Cozin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you neede not doubt off. My Lord (quoth *Palmerin*) the King and you haue so highlie honoured mee, as wheresoeuer I shall come heereafter, I rest yours in my verie vttermost endeuours.

These wordes did Ptolome heare, the Sonne of Frenaro, whom Florendos had kept since ẏ time he was his page, and was now olde enough to receyue the Knighthood: which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especially if the King would moue *Palmerin* to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee denyed, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I might receiue my order of Knighthood, before *Palmerin* departed from your Court, I am assured he would not disdaine me for his companion, especially if your Maiestie did moue the question on my behalfe. Beleeue me, quoth the King so good a motion shall not be hindred by me, & therefore to morrow will I giue you your order, and such Armor as shall well beseeme a Knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was *Ptolome* at these speeches, and gaue order for his prouision of needefull occasions, till euening came, when he entred the Chappell, where he spent the night in deuout orisons, that heauen

would so further his whole course of his time, as might stand with the aduauncement of iustice and his owne honor. Earlie in the morning the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knightes, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knees, he geue him his knighthode, wishing his fortune to proue such as might make him famous where euer he came: afterward he desired Palmerin, that this new knight might beare him companie in his trauailes, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Ptolomes behauiour, as he purposed thence forward not to forsake so good a companion. Then they both toke their leaue of the king and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making such good expedition in their iourney, as hauing crost the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the Cittie was besieged on all sides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vnseene of the enemie: which the Gentleman their guide, perceiued so well, as by priuie lanes made to the Sentinell, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriual, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome he entertained with great honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar conference with him, till hauing brought him to his Chamber, he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning, when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.

Your arriuall, Sir knight, doth arme me with such assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receiue at your hande, mine enemie (I trust) shal not ouerbrane me as he hath done hitherto: and therefore you with your worthie companion, are both so welcome as you can desire. My Lord, (quoth Palmerin) the king that sent me to you, hath bound me to him by so manie courtesies, as for the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my vttermost seruice, so long as I shall be able to holde my Sword.

The

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to Dinner: at which time, Palmerins eyes were fixing on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that euer he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in beholding her, as hee gaue small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull iniuryes the Court had offered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes had passed betweene them since the beginning of the warre. Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very neere allied to the Duke: and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber; Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse-Daughter so troubled his thoughts, which made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the three Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was beside promised him in his slaping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the yong Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall heere more hereafter. The Count hauing all this while maintained very straight siege, intending now to loose or gaine all, gaue fierce assault vpon the Cittie, first calling all the chiefest Lordes and Captaines of his Armie, moning them with earnest and Souldierlike perswasions, to forcse the aduantages, and to encounter their enemies with magnanimious and resolute courage. When he had thus imboldened his men to the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions they had the Cittie battaile: then might they behold how they bestirred themselues with Fagots to fill the Ditches,

and

and Trenches, sat scaling ladders to the walles, how the one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost their liue or departed maimed: such hauocke did Palmerin and Prolome with the Dukes power, make on theyr enemies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and marauailous well prouided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembred a sodaine pollicie to preuent a mischiefe, for as the enemie retired to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best Knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leauing the rest well appointed for defence of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and comming roughly againe vppon the Citie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a brane onset, as they were enforced to forsake their scaling Ladders or resist this incounter. There were many stroakes deliuered on either side, the Counte and most part of his Knights being on horsebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte seeing such a hardy attempt giuen on a sodaine, and doubting fresh supplie would come from the Citie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loade with marauailous fiercenesse, whereat the Counte was so offended, as comming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroake on the Helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recouer himselfe againe, and requited the Counte with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Prolome had so cauuazed the Counts brother as hee sealed him a quittance with his sword for his life. Then began the Counts Houldiours to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take themselues to flight, leauing theyr

Maister

maister ouerthrowne in the Armie, where he was troden to death with the trompling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to saue their liues, whome Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselues toget'er againe, and espying aduantage, they might so endanger them: for oftentimes the vanquished too narrowly pursued, recouer courage and dant the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returned with his men into the Citie: the Duke vnderstanding the forle of his enemie, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom imbracing he thus entertained. My good Knights, by you is my estate recouered, and the death of my Sonnes reuenged on the murderer, therefore dispose of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heauen haue this honour of our victory: as for me I haue done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your vncle, who hath honoured me in sending me to you, and other recompence I neuer did or will serue. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceiued by the bloud on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let vs make haste to our Pallace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well seene in chirurgerie, shall giue attendance on you till you are recouered. So mounting on horseback they rode to the Pallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter helps to disarme him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Vrbanillo the Dwarfe saying to him. My friend, desire thy Maister make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake will dispaire of nothing. Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, you haue good reason to wish my maister well, as well for

me

the good assistance hee gaue the Duke your father, as all in respect of his deserts, which are as honourable as any that euer came in this court. These words Palmerin very well heard, hauing his eye continually on her: wherefore when she and all the other were departed, hee called Vrbanillo, demaunded what talke hee had with the Princesse, which he reported and his answere also. Gramercies saye Palmerin, I pray thee finde the meane to let her know that I am her seruant and knight, ready to accomplish any thing that shee shall commaund me. Referre this matter to me Sir quoth the Dwarfe, I know what Saint must patronize these affaires, and what offering must bee layde on his Altar.

CHAP. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamored with the beautie of the Princesse Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his visions.

VRbanillo the Dwarfe not forgetfull of his Maisters commaundement, the next day whē Laurana came with her most to visit Palmerin, she tooke the Dwarfe aside, demanding what rest his maister tooke the night past. Madam (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you for in you two consists the disposition of my Maisters health. As how, quoth shee; Thus Madame, sayd Vrbanillo: the first day that he beheld you, he gaue the whole possession of himselfe so firmely to you, that day & night he meditates on your diuine perfections, doth

ting in requitall of his seruice to my Lord your Father and his Country, whose liues and yours he hath defended, h mselfe shall bee repayde with sodaine and cruell death: or, had hee not come for your safety, well had hee escaped this dangerous extremity. Then seeing (sayde Madame) that his valour hath been the meane of your deliuerance, doe not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gaue you life. Why, my friend (quoth she) what wouldst thou haue me to doe? Loue him, sweet Madam quoth he, as he doth you. Alas, sir, quoth she, thou maist assure thy selfe, that none can wish thy Master better then I doe, being my deuty and his desert: with which words shee changed colour with such modest bashfulnes, as it might be perceyued she could hardly master her affections. Which, when the Dwarffe behe d, as one not to learne his lesson in this art, perswaded himselfe by the very lookes of Laurana, that his Masters loue would soone to happy end, and thereupon hee followed the matter thus. I thinke Madame, that you wish my Master as well as any, but that is not inough, vnlesse your wish agree with his in this point, that you graunt your selfe his onely Lady and Mistresse, as hee hath vowed himselfe your Knight and Seruant. If it may please you to wish this good to my Master, vouchsafe this fauour as a president of your liking: that so soone as hee shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and vnsuspected place, as hee may haue liberty to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas, quoth she, how should I so doe, without offering too much impeach to mine own honour. Madam, sayd the Dwarffe, the night giues fauour to louers best enterprises. By this time the Duchesse was ready to depart, which Laurana perceyuing, said to the Dwarfe: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will doe for his welfare what I may with modesty. By reason of their departure, the Dwarfe could not make her answere, but shadowing the matter as hee had

had done before, went about his Masters businesse, till he came and found him alone, when he discouered all that had passed betweene the Princesse and him, which so well contented Palmerin, as nothing could more: because hee perswaded himselfe, as I haue sayde already, that this was shee which the three sisters promised him, by whom hee should receiue the honour that destiny allowed him. For this cause thence forward hee was very desirous to know her name, commaunding Vrbanillo very strainely to enquire it, which hee did, informing his maister, that her name was Laurana: whereupon he well saw, that hee was deceyued, in that the three sisters had named his Mistresse Polmarda, & therefore he resolued to withdraw his affection, and to depart thence so soone as hee could bee able to beare Armour: But it may bee easily presumed, that when one harn so far ventured in loue, that he perceiues himselfe beloued, as the Dwarfe perswaded his maister, hardly can hee giue ouer so fayre a beginning: yet heere it fell out contrary, as you shall well perceiue, that the end was more sodaine than the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princes name, beganne to vse other countenance to her then he was accustomed: but shee good Lady (in his excuse) conceiued better opinion then shee had cause: yet as it euermore falleth out in loue, that when Ladies see themselues but slenderly courted by their friends, they grow importunate in their amorous desires: so came it to passe with Laurana who perceiuing her self not solicited by Palmerin as she was wont, one night somewhat late shee called the Dwarfe and thus beganne. How comes it to passe my good Friend that thy maister is not of so pleasant disposition, as heer tofore he hath been? it may be thou hast not let him understand my last salutation, or else feare withholds him from following his determination: I pray thee doe the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long impart our affections together, to the full resolution of desired thoughts, which I haue found the way vnsuspec

ccomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to mor-
at night, where I shall not faile to expect his presence.
hen the Dwarfe heard Laurana vse these wordes, thin-
g his Master was still in his former cogitations, thus
wered. Trust me, fayre Madame, within these fewe
es, my master is become so melancholike, as I haue ma-
times feared his death, and I am sure hee hath no o-
cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the ex-
me loue he beares you: yet seeing you haue promised
such great fauour, let me alone to change this vn-
asant humour. Fayle not then (quoth she) to let him
w my mind. I goe presently, sayd the Dwarfe, to ac-
int him with these long desired tidings. So taking his
e, he went to his maisters chamber, whome hee found
a sleepe, when not daring to awake him, let stay his
ssage till the next morning, and so layde him downe to
, at what time sleepe had throughly possessed him, he be-
to cry and complaine so loude, as his Maister hearing
, arose, and demaunded of him the cause of his lament.
s, my Lord (quoth he) neuer in all my life was I so af-
hted, me thought that one of the fayrest Ladies that e-
eye looked on, held a naked sword against my throate,
ng, Vile, and villanous creature as thou art, darest
resume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lorde
ster amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake me?
st thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy pail-
oise, and if hereafter thou carry any message to preiu-
e my right, assure thy self, that I will chastice thee in such
t, as all desormed villaines shall receiue example by thee.
ell thee Traytor, Palmerin his fortunes climbe high-
then the name of Laurana, and where he is more loued
the royalty of his linage, then for his base and pastorall
ucation Wich which words shee gaue me such a stroake
the head with her sworde, as I, (fearefull of my life)
ed so loude as you say, you heard mee. This motion made
lmerin easily perceiue, that Polinarda had made this
threat-

threatning to the Dwarfe for Laurana: which con
to himselfe, he sayde in laughter. I thinke thou dra
to drinke when thou camest to bed, and so thy hea
drie, conceyued this vision: I pray the sleepe, and
me no more with such idle passions. The Dwarfe
him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night
mering on this dreame, so that he resolued to depart
the next morning, and seeke elsewhere his adue
seeing hee was aduertised by so many aduertisemen
at the day rising, hee called the Dwarfe, and com
ded him to prepare his Armour, for hee intended
his leaue of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, a
ning noted beside all the Dwarfe told his maste
night, dissembling the matter, as was his manne
came, and bad Palmerin good morrow, who answe
lome in this manner. My deare friend, I haue con
none of mine affayres from thee, since the time we
our knighthood, and parted together from the Court
cedon: now therefore will I impart to thee what
determined.

It is so, that vrgent occasions constraine me pre
to leaue this Country, and henceforth to frame my
which way fortune will direct me, by which occa
we must bee enforced to leaue each other notwit
let mee intreate that our absence may no way
friendship, not doubting but in good time we
together againe. In meane space, if you see
Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duety
vowed Seruant, I beseech you, who dedicates his
honour in all attempts to their gracious fauours. B
sayd Ptolome, let who will doe the message for me, fo
ther death nor danger shall separate me from you:
will beare you company while life and soule holde to
If you bee so resolued, said Palmerin, shame were it fo
to refuse you. Set forward then when you please (
Ptolome) for we neither must nor will depart, thats

So being both armed, they came to the Duke, who marvelled much to see them so prepared, and therefore demaunded whither they went. My good Lord (answered Palmerin) in that your Countrey is nowe quieted, wee must intreate you for our departure, because waightie affaires in other places doo so commaund vs. How happens it fayre Friendes, (said the Duke,) that you will so soone leaue mee? My Lord (quoth Palmerin) wee are so enforced: and therefore wee humbly intreate you not to be offended. If your affaires be such (said the Duke) loath I am to hinder you, commaund of mee and mine what you please, for all remaineth at your disposition. Most humble thanks did Palmerin, and Ptolome returne to the Duke, and ere they went to Horseback, they came to take their leaue of the Duchesse and Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceyued, for shee expected the night comming, when shee and Palmerin should conferre together of their loue: but seeing him now departing, shee was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreame griefe whereof so ouercame her, as gining a great shricke she fell in a swoune.

The Ladies and Gentle-women in great amazement came about her, ignorant of her cull, but only Palmerin and the Dwarfe, which hee likewise would not reueale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would she entertaine her owne death, then make knowne a secrete of such importance: Wherefore hauing somewhat recouered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an extreame sigh she thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easily hast thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leauest consuming vnquenched. Who would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where faire conditions and honourable valour shined so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Beleiue mee Knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where euer thou commest, bee thou named the most vngratefull

Knight that euer drew Sword, seeking her death so cruelly, who loues thee dearer then her owne life.

These complaintes made Laurana before the Duchesse, not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed heart, her Mother not daring to gainesay her, but expecting when she should depart this life: wherefore perswading herselfe from despaire, shee secretly promised to worke so with Palmerin, as he should stay, and enioy her to his Wife. But all this was in vaine, for hee mounted on horseback, and accompanied *Ptolome* and Vrbanillo, left the Citie of Duraco, no one knowing which way they were ridden: *Palmerin* conuerted into such heauinesse, as nothing could torment him more, so earnest was his desire to see her, whom Fate and Fortune had appointed for him.

CHAP. XXI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damosell, who made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.

Being thus departed from Duraco, the Knights rode along, thinking in what heauinesse they had left the Duke Daughter: when Palmerin accused himselfe as guiltie of this mischaunce within himselfe thus sadly discoursed. Vnhappie man that euer thou came into this Countrey, where thou hast left so hard an opinion of thy selfe, as while thou liuest thou shalt be the worse esteemed: and well worthie, for iustly maist thou be accused of disloyaltie, in making meanes to obtaine the loue

of the faire Princesse Laurana, and hauing conquered where thou desiredst, to make so little account of her as thou hast done. Hadde death preuented thée before, shée had bene satisfyed, thine Honour defended, and thy vnknowne Pollnarda no way iniuried: Which speeches made the teares to trickle downe his chéeks: when Ptolome loking aside espyed him, and guessing the cause of his sicknes, said. Verily I neuer thought to see such womanish behauiour in you, nor that any griefe or misfortune should haue teares so sone at commaundement. How will you hereafter withstand so many casualties, hard aduentures, and dangerous Stratagems, with many and sundry narrow brunts that you must passe through, when I see you vnable to ouercome your own selfe, being surprized by her teares, to whome you haue done honour to afford a good countenance? If you hadde receyued of her the sweetes of Loue, reason might then pleade in your excuse: but hauing no way misprised her honour, or offered offence to modest chastitie: what iniurie may shée say that you haue done her? Forget I pray you these vnséemely fashions, hardly agreeing with a Knight of such report as you are: let vs finde some thing else to talke on: and tell me which way you intend to iourney? By my life (quoth Palmerin,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then (saide Ptolome) that we shape our course towards Rome, where wee shall find people of all Nations, by whom we may be instructed, as concerning Aduentures worthy our trauell, and guiding to honour. On then chéerely (quoth Palmerin,) and they trauelled eight dayes together, not méeting with any aduenture worthie to be spoken of, till at length they mette with a Damosell heauily mourning, who said: Alas, what shall shee say, whose trust was onely in mee, hauing lost the thing wherein consisted her hopes, to recouer the highest of her noble desires? Palmerin hearing these wordes, and mooued with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the cause of her mourning? Syr Knight (quoth shée) I was sent

by a Lady with a Casket, wherein was one of the best Swords in the whole world, which is so Enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the Scabberd, but hee that is estemed the worthiest Knight liuing: but before any be admitted to make proofe of this Aduenture, hee must graunt a requeste that I am to aske him. With this Sword haue I trauelled many strange Countreyes, as France, Italie, Sclauonie, and diuers others, whereof many haue tryed, but no one yet could finish the Aduenture: whereupon I was this day trauelling towards the Emperours Court of Greece, and heere by I mette with two Knights, who hauing heard the cause of my long trauell, made proofe of their Fortune, one after another, and both failed, whereat they were so offended, as they toke the Casket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I know not whither: which doth so much grieue mee in respect of her losse towards whome I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) do not discomfort your selfe, but shew me which way they rode that dealt with you so discourteously. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) if your hap be to restore my losse againe, you do the most gracious act that euer Knight did for a distressed Damosell. These Traytors to honour (whereof the one is in Crimson Armour, bearing in his shield three Lyons heads) toke this way by the Wood, and as yet I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasped his Helmet, and taking his Sword and Launce, desired Ptolome to guarde the Damosell and follow him, galloping that way which shee had shewed him: and by the time hee had rid two miles, hee espyed them he looked for, talking with another knight they had mette, and they three together were essaying to open the Casket, with whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villains, that cannot mete with Ladyes on the way, but must offer them iniurie, deliuer the Casket or yee die: One of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatned them to be alone, not mouing a iote, beganne to laugh, and scornfully

turne

returned this answere. Softly, softly, good Syr, God pardon they? soules whome you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ranne against them, and they at him, so that hée receyued a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence whereof, hée gaue one of them a passe-port into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as hée set him quickely besides his Saddle. When the third saw his companions at so harde a reckoning, he saide to himselfe. By my faith he spake not vnaduisedly that saide A safe escape is better then a bad tarrying: And allowing this sentence for currant in his owne opinion, gaue the spurres to his Horse, making haste away with the Casket, so fast as hee could: but Palmerin beeing somewhat better mounted, got such aduantage of this Runaway, as with his Sword he parted his right arme from his body, whereupon hee fell to the ground and the Casket with him. Then Palmerin alighted, and toke it vp, and leauing the knight there, returned which way hee came: when opening the Casket, hee toke great pleasure in beholding the Sword, which was marueilous costly: yet would hee not prowe to drawe it forth, because he knewe not her pleasure to whome it appertained. At length he espyed Ptolome comming, who canne a pace (if nede had beene) to haue assisted him: but when he knew how he had ouercome the knights, and recouered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damozell, who leaping from her Palfray, came and kissed Palmerins feete, saying. And may all happinesse repay this gentle déede, Fayre knight, for but by you, my death had bene best welcome to mée.

Damozell (quoth hee) see here the Casket according as I found it, I knowe not whether they that toke it from you haue abused it or no. No, no, (saide shee) they could no way wrong it, the Sword beeing heere that belongs to the best knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let mee make tryall of my strength, albeit I know my self no such man as you speak of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damozell desired him to forbeare, for (quoth shée) you must first

graunt mee one request. What ere it bee saide Ptolome, I graunt it: and so set all his might to his intent, but could not accomplish it. Wherefore quoth he to the Damozell, beleiue me Lady, he that wrought this Enchantment, did more by his Arte, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may trauell long enough before you finde him that shall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, (quoth the Damozell) beeing tyed by necessitie to such a Knightes fortune. When Palmerin saw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether hee should take it in hand or no: yet seeing hee could speede no worse then others had done, he said to the Damozell, will you any thing with mee before I aduenture my selfe, for my Friend shall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) I will nothing, but that you make the like promise your Friend did. Of that doubt you not, saide Palmerin: so laying hands valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he deriue it forth, being the richest and goodlyest Sword that euer was sene.

Ah good Knight, (saide the Damozell) happie bee the day of thy Natiuitie, for thou hast delinered mee from incredible labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promise you stand bound to goe with mee where I shall conduct you, to do that shall please my Lady to commaund you. Leade the way Damosell (quoth Palmerin,) and be sure wee will not leaue thy company. So mounted the Damozell on her Palfray, and toke the way towards Rome, where shee that deliuered her Casket remained in deuotion, & with such speede they dispatched their Trauell, as they arriued at the Gate of a strong Castle, where the Damozell alighted, desiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne a while. The Gate being opened, shee went straight to her Mistresse and her Sister, who being glad of her comming, demanded if shee had found out the man shee went to seeke. Deere Ladyes (quoth shee) I haue, and hither he is come with mee, but this I dare assure you before hand, that a more goodly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my presence he van-

quished

quished three Knights, who perforce toke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it had beene that he weareth by his side. Goe, said the Lady, and cause him come neere, and come Sister let vs goe to the gate to entertaine him. Then was the drawe Bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reuerence, and each Lady leading a Knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be vnarmed.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Darmaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant: as much for pitty, as to acquite his promise made to the Damosell that brought the Casket and the enchaunted Sword.

THe two Knights being thus entred the Castle and vnarmed, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, imbroodered with gold and pearle to couer them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where wanted no choise of daintie delicates: so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speches passed betweene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as nowe I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was Wife to one of the wel-

thiefe Knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not hauing any Childe, till at length it pleased God to send mee a Daughter, so faire a creature as euer Nature framed, who at my Husbands death was left with mee but fiue yeares aged. My Lord and Husband learned in the Art Magicke, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he called me to him, vsing these speeches. Deere Wife, let it suffice thee that I knowe what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leaue thee, but also thy faire Daughter: to helpe which extreamitie, I haue somewhat prouided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sworde, which I my selfe haue enclosed in a Casket, and haue sette so many Enchaunted spells on that Sword, as no man shall be able to drawe it out of the Scabbard, vnlesse hee be the best approued knight in the World, and hee it is that must giue thee succour, and helpe to recouer againe thy losse. Too true fell out my Husbands speeches: For shortly after Darmaco the Gyant came hither, and as his custome was to abuse whome hee listed, so toke he from mee the best of my Castles, and in despight of me toke my Daughter from mee, saying: that hee would giue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine farre more vicious then his Father, and so deformed, as Nature stands ashamed at her owne workemanship. Now in respect I would not consent to this vnseemly Marriage, such goods as was left mee hee most violently toke from mee, this Sword onely excepted, which you haue worthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hidde it very secretly. Now worthy Knight, if euer pittie toke place in thy gentle heart, reuenge mee on this Villaine, that hath thus robbed me of my goods and my Daughter. whose youth (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cause that the Gyant hath not consummated the Marriage. And if it shall like you to do thus much for mee, you shall not onely fulfill your promise to the Damosell that brought you hither, but you

shall

ſhall doe a deede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my poore Childe, and honourable for euer vnto your owne ſelfe. Madame (aunſwered Palmerin) it is no meruaile if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants doe take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promiſe binde mee to your Damoſell, I would not paſſe ſo lightly out of this Countrey, ere I compelled him ſomewhat to recompence this iniurie, and this ſhall I (God willing) doe to morrowe, ſo pleaſe you I may bee conducted to him. Ah gentle Knight, ſayd the Lady, what I am not able, Heauen will no doubt repay thee: And becauſe it was now ſomewhat late, after they had ſpent a little more time together in conference, theſe Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leaue, committed the Knights to their good reſt for that night, which they paſſed with quiet repoſe, and on the next morning after they were armed, they demaunded their guide of the Ladie, that ſhould direct them the way towardes the Giant. Then ſhee called the Damoſell that carried the Caſket, and two Knights of her owne, whom ſhee commaunded to goe with Palmerin: ſo committing him to God and good ſucceſſe, they toke their way ſtraight to the Caſtle of Darmaco, where they arriued in the morning, when they eſpied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to kéepe the watch, to whom Palmerin ſayd. My friend, I pray thee if Darmaco be within, cauſe him to come forth, for I would ſpeake with him. And what would you with him aunſwered the Squire? I would intreate him, ſaide Palmerin, to vſe himſelfe more courteouſly then hee hath done heretofore, and that hee would doe right to a good Lady whom hee hath diſinherited, namely to ſend her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreatie may not preuaile with him, bidde him if hee dare come to the Combate, wherein I will make him confeſſe vnder my Sword, that his actions haue beene villainous, trayterous, and diſloyall. In good ſoth Sir, aunſwered the Squire in deriſion,

derision, you may seeme to haue reason, and they that sent you likewise, but your iourney I feare me will not amount to so much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you going, vnlesse you are willing to leaue your heads for a signe to our Gates. My head, said Palmerin, my Sword holdes too good an edge, and mine arme too sound strength, to leaue a Iewell of such price so easily: goe therefore when I bidde thee, thou wert best, otherwise assure thy selfe if I vanquish thy Maister, that thou with the rest shalt surely dye the death. Tush sonne, said the Squire, shall I doe your message: and if any harme happen to you, say my good Friend you were counselled before: but as for my Maister Darmaco, hee hath not beene within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano heere, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demaunding of Palmerin what hee sought for? I tolde thy Squire, answered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in offering villanie to Ladies? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am? I pray thee, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any further quarrell hee deliuer the Lady that hee detaines violently, otherwise I shall cause him to doe it whether hee will or no. I shall make thee answere, said Mordano, if thou darest tarrie but till I arme my selfe: and so presently departing, in short time he came forth very well appointed, with a meruailous strong Launce in his hand, and mounted on a verie lustie Courser, so prauncing towards Palmerin, he said. Wretch, art thou come to seeke thine owne death? I pittie thee: yet if thou wilt yeelde thy selfe to my mercie, I will spare thy life, and suffer thee to waste thy time in one of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From lodging there, God shelde mee, quoth Palmerin: and being moued with these rough words of his enemie, hee encountred Mordano with such courage, as their Launces being broken, both of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano

was

was wounded on the right side, the trunchion of Palmerins Launce being left in his body. Notwithstanding hee recouered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towardes Palmerin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on the head, as the blod beganne to trickle downe his face: which when hee perceiued, and how it stode him in hand now to bee venturous, hee requited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and astonied him likewise that hee fell to the ground: but recouering himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after him. The Seruaunts of the Castle, seing their Lords Sonne in such danger, with Iauelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whom they had murdered, if Ptolome and the two Knights that were sent with him, had not speedily come from their close ambush to defend him: and so manfully did they behaue themselues, as they droue them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Ptolomes feete, who deferring no time, presently with his Sword toke his head from his shoulders. The seruants this seing, dispersed themselues and ranne into corners, so that Palmerin and his company had no body left to resist them, sonely lying there wounded to the death, and other escaping forth at a backe Gate, which they made fast after them, least they should be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, hee called for the Damosell and the Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad of this great good fortune, desired first to seke for Elmerinda their Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that shee was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth hee: and because the night drew on, the Gates were made fast, & there they determined to lodge for that night. In the meane while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and neere the Giants Chamber shee found Elmerinda, who immediatly knowing her, came running and caught her louingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her companie had conquered the Castle) shee and three other Women that

kept

kept her companie, were greatly feared, but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely Knight for prowesse in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus sent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Esmerinda humbled her selfe on her knées: but hee taking her vp, embraced her with these speeches. Prettie soule, your Lady mother hath great desire to see you, will not you goe with vs to her? Sir Knight, quoth she, I neuer in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the false Darmaco will meete vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Sisters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to meete vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that good Lady, sayd Palmerin: I haue alreadie killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this small practise will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuised with Esmerinda, the Damosell and Vrbanillo had prouided Supper, which being ended they went to rest, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to horse-backe: and hauing taken what them best liked out of the Cattle, they set fire on the rest, and so toke their way towards the sorrowfull Widdow: who expecting good tydings, continued in earnest and deuoute Orizons, that the good Knight might ouercome her blood-thirsty enemy, and return with victory, and her Daughter Esmerinda.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Caſtle, happened to meete with the Giant Darmaco, who loſt his life in Combat with Palmerin.

THus rode Palmerin and his company very ioyfull of their good fortune, eſpecially Eſmerinda, aboue all the reſt: but this pleaſant humour laſted not long, for ſhee had eſpied Darmaco comming forth of a wood, hauing with him his wife and tenne well appointed knights: whereat the young Lady was ſo affrighted, as ſhe cryed out, ſaying: O God, now are we all caſt away. At which words the other women beganne to diſcourage themſelues, and ſeeing the Giant ſo neere, knewe not whither they were beſt to goe forward or backe againe: whereupon Palmerin ſayde to Ptolome. I pray thee good Friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and theſe two knights deale with the reſt: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Dwarfe Vrbanillo conuey theſe Ladies into the thickeſt of the wood. He had no ſooner thus ſaid, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet ſeeing faire Eſmerinda ſo deliuered, in wonderfull rage, not taking eyther Sword or Shealde with him, hee praunced towardes Palmerin, who entertained him ſo ſoundly on the head with his Faulchion, as this Giant tumbled forth of his Saddle, hanging in his ſtirrop by the left ſote, and was no way able to recouer himſelfe.

The

The Horse feeling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heauie on his side, the Giants foote likewise tickling him in the flancke, began to course about, and to beate his Maister with his feete euery way hee could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid him on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his companions against the other Knights, wherein hee was deceiued, for the Giantesse to reuenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Mace, as had hee not shrunke aside she had slaine him, and so continued more like a Lyon then a Woman, redoubling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegard of himselfe, seeing no meanes or perswasions could preuaile with her, to send her packing after her Husband. Ptolome and his Knights had dealt so well with the rest, as on the comming of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, if fresh supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so soone as Palmerin departed thence towardes the Giant, sent to seeke a young Gentleman named Crispino, to whom she promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could recouer her againe out of the Giants power: who staying not long after this message, made haste to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good Friend, there departed hence a Knight, who intendes to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what ende this enterprise will sort, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the good Knight if he should be distressed. Crispino soone consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to meete with the Dwarfe and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to demaund how pleasing this sight was to him, beholding Esmerinda whom hee loued as himselfe: of whom he demaun-

ded

ded where their company was, and shée reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon hée commaunded fiue of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was nére at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two Knights encountred with the freshly supply that came to Darmacos men. Hée was no sooner arriued, but hée beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies Knights slaine among the rest, which moued him and his men to bestirre themselues: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how hée had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cozins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walke, hée should receiue what courtesie could be performed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey should finde by him, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonne, but aboue all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cozin made them very gracious welcome, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the good Widdowe, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in marriage, desiring him to assist the matter that it might be finished: which hée promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daughter, and heard how her chiefest enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her cheerefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle Knight, how might I be able while I liue to recompence this inestimable fauour? the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may neuer harmes befall so good a Knight. Ladie, quoth he, giue the praise to God, as for mee, iudge if I haue béene as good as my promise to your Damosell or no:

and

and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You haue done so much for me, sayde shée, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, vnlesse of your bountie you will cause mée to receiue what the Giant toke from me by force: for seeing hée is dead, they that withholde it from mée, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because he and Ptolome were sore wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured, and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a good sufficient traine, to demaunde the Ladies Castle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, vnderstanding his death, made present deliuerance thereof, and committed themselues to the Ladies mercie: whither shée sent her Daughter, so soone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Subiects vowed their faith and alleageance, and with great Triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrowe, as the Knight sate at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, shée fell on her knées before Palmerin, saying. Sir Knight, doe you not knowe mée? Not of good sooth, answered Palmerin. Beleeue mée (quoth the Damosell) then hath my seruice béene euill imployed which sometime I did you, and whereof I am sure you haue had good account. Then Palmerin knew her (shée bringing the Shéelde and the Helmet when Florendos Knighted him) whereupon hée rose from the Table, and embracing her said. Faire Damosell and my Friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first sawe you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: pleaseth it you to command mée any seruice? Sir Knight, sayd the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shéelde, whereupon you toke your order of Knighthode, you promised mée (as you remember) that you would vse it with right good will in any affaires the Knight had that sent it you, and who

e should require such performance: now is the time to con-
irme your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you
with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where
I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his
eath. God shield me from such misfortune, said Palmerin,
ather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So
oe I pray you (quoth shee) for I haue haste. Then hee cal-
d for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went in-
o his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also:
eturning, they toke their leaue of the Ladies and mounted
n horseback, the whole company being so sorrie for their
epartuce, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I
promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine
pinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so good a Knight. La-
y, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you
nely: content your selfe with the good you haue receiued by
im, and suffer such as haue neede of his prowesse, to receiue
s assistance as you haue done. And good reason, said Esme-
nda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered
hen helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with
e Damosell which way she guided them, and very desirous
as Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to seeke him:
ecause he would gladly know, of whence he was that wish-
him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the
ne day he was Knighted.

CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entred Combat against the Countie of Ormeque and his two Couzins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to seeke Palmerin.

Many miles had these Knights rid with the Damosell, when Palmerin at length desired her to tell him, what hee was that sent him the helmet and the shield whereto she answered, that sáing he was so desirous to know, listen, quoth she and I shall report the whole vnto you. The Knight wee speake of, is descended of very royall blood being Uncle to the King of Bohemia that raignes at the present, as also to the Empresse of Allemaigne, the very best scene in Negromancie this day liuing. This noble man named Prince Adrian, who neuer liked to liue in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what patrimonie his Father left him, at length married with a very beautifull Lady, of whom in time he begat a Sonne named Dyardo, which Sonne his Brother the King of Bohemia, nourished vp in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutuall in loue agréed these two young Princes, as after the death of the aged King, the young Dyardo should ioynthy with his Couzin the King: who tooke to wife the Daughter to the Duke of Lorayne, bringing her with him into the Countrey, in company of her Sister, a Princesse so wise

to

vertuous as euer liued. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as hee determined neuer to haue any other to his Wife, if hee might compasse what hee intended. For her good Lady, hee could not be deceiued in his amorous desires, hee found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shaddow their affections so discreetly, as none could perceiue them, but Domarto the traiterous Countie of Ormeque, one of the best Knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honestie, as he is with malice and disloyaltie. This Traytour enterprised to match with the Queenes Sister, beloued as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and thereupon after many solicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, whereof she made so slender account, as shee forbad him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lord Dyardo his onely hinderance in loue, intended a malicious villanie, and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that hee intended to poyson the King, so to obtaine a Crowne, as descended of a nerer consanguinitie. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one seekes to crosse an others fortune, there is no time slacked in following such drifts: euen so this Traytour, finding the young King alone, began his matter in this colourable sort. My gracious Lord, the faith and alleageance I owe to your highnesse, bindes mee to make your Princely eares acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witnesse, sayde the Traytour (lifting his eyes and hands to heauen) mine owne death were more welcome to mee, such is the loue I beare them whom it concernes, being all so neere allied to you in birth, as sorrie am I they should be detected: but in your regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sort as it doth, let mee die rather then spare any liuing creature, no not mine owne Sonne, had Nature giuen mee any. This nedelesse exordium haue I made to so foule an occasion, albeit truth nedes no colours or eloquent figures: and therefore in briefe my Lord, this is the summe, I am

credibly enformed, that your Highnesse Couzin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Sister of the Quæne, haue laide the platforme to poyson your Maiestie, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pretends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I know not whether it be for want of discretion or no: but howsoeuer it be my Lord, you should not leaue such a villanie vnpunished. The King began greatly to meruaile at these newes, and knew not well what to thinke: whereupon hee aunswered the Countie, that hee could not beleeue this accusation. But the Traytour set so smoothe a countenance on the matter, and did auerre it still with such stout protestations, as hee induced the King to beleeue him: so that a day or two after, the King being walking in his Garden, seeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Quænes Chamber window, secretly conferring of their amorous affections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The Countie glad thereof, prouoked the King still with such anger against them, as immediatly hee would haue them both done to death: but that the Quæne and the Lords of his Counsell, found meanes to qualifie his displeasure, declaring what discredit his Highnesse should receiue, if he did not suffer them to be openly conuicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorant of this detection, till at length the King discoursed the whole matter to them, and likewise who was their accuser: nor did the Countie faile to maintaine his words openly, offering to make it good in fight, against any that durst say the contrary: and because he had two Couzins, hardie and valiant Knights, conspiratours likewise in this faction, there could be none found that would enter the Combat against them. Which when the noble Prince Adrian vnderstoode, very griefe had welnere slaine him, in respect he had no Childe but this Dyardo, as also for that hee was accused with that he neuer thought. Hereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and prevailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two

Moneths,

neths, to bring with him one or two that might maine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the incesse Cardonia, against the Traytour Domarto and Cousins. And this is the cause he sent mee to seeke you th, in hope that you are as much his Friend as hee is rs, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly sents hee sent you by mee to Macedon. So helpe mee od, said Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange disse, and neuer did I thinke, that such treason could enter thoughts of any Knight, or other inferiour person. All is is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed that the ince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed Father, shall deo their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other: he neuer as yet receiued the order of Knighthod, and therefore is constrained to desire your assistance. And that shall I with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God wee were re where hee expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see n, as also to vnderstand what hee knowes of my follow- fortunes. Those matters are hid from mee, quoth shee, this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talke ou, that he accounted you the most honourable Knight in world: and that if he euer chaunced to see you, he would ise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, e the Knightly Seruaunt to the Princesse Polinarda. hen Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, hee remem- d that it was her name, whom hee had so many times ne in his traunces, for which cause hee asked of the Dasell, what the Lady was of whom she spake? My Lord, th shee, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and ece vnto my Lord Adrian, the most beautifull Princesse t euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin, the more ly may I be induced to graunt her my seruice, and the r intend I to trauaile, when I haue finished your Lords inesse. So rode they with much more haste then before, at length they came to the Citie of Almedya, where the ng remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins

comming: which when hee heard, hee came to meete h
each embracing other with meruailous courteſie, and
god olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus ſaid. Ah
Knight, what may countervaile this your exceeding pai
to maintaine the right of my Sonne and mee, who
falſely accuſed of ſuch villanous treaſon, as (on the p
of my ſoule) wee neuer did imagine: Thereof am I
tainly perſwaded, anſwered Palmerin, and therefore a
come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirm
therwiſe. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuſe
hencefoorth from bearing Armes, but being vnable to
dure ſo vilde a ſlaunder, ſo long as life and ſeule will h
together, ſhall I doe my deuoire: ſo pleaſe your compa
to make the ſecond, as olde as I am I will be the third,
the trayterous Count hath two of his Cozins that take
with him. And if my fortune ſo fall out as I die in this
all, I ſhall receiue my let very contentedly, if mine e
might firſt behold mine iniurie reuenged. I pray you
Palmerin, goe preſently to the King, to the ende that
Highneſſe may graunt vs the field, for my Friend an
thinke long till we haue made your accuſer know his
cherie. Adrian immediatly went to the King, and on
knees thus began. My Lord, you knowe that the Co
of Ormeque hath accuſed me, my Sonne Dyardo, and
dame Cardonya, of the crime of Leſæ Maieſtatis, a
that wee all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine, th
hath falſely and maliciouſly belyed vs, which I my
will approue vpon him, or two more with mee, againſt
and his Couzins, if they dare enter the fielde with hi
this quarrell, where wee will either make knowne the
lanie, or receiue the reward belongs to diſloyall Trayto
As for the wrong which you (my Lord) haue done mee,
ing your Vncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Couzin
maine, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the
ter knowledge you ſhall receiue of mee hereafter, be
now to olde to be a Traytour, and my Sonne to lou

proue disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Vn-
speake so audaciously, doubting now whether hee should
e credite to what had beene reported, especially against
n, so neere his Highnesse in blood, who so liberally offered
nter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and
d body made him vnfit for such actions, wherefore hee
s answered. Good Vncle, impute not mee any thing
llie in your accusation, and that the proofe shall main-
that must be made. The Counte being present, was
ken in a quandary at these words, and gladly hee would
e denied this former slaunder, but hee could finde no way
nely to doe it: wherefore seeing of force hee must needes
er the Combat, he boldly fell on his knees before the King
h these wordes. My Lord, what I haue saide is verie
aine, and most true it is, that by the counsell of Prince
rian heere present, his Sonne practised with Lady Car-
nia, to poyson you, that hee might be King, which to make
, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my
zins. Thou liest Traytour in thy throat, said olde Adri-
I take thine offer: and as hee would haue gone on with
her speeches, Palmerin stept before the King, saying.
o my Lord, seeing the effect of the wordes must be put
recution, which haue beene heere spoken on both sides
ze your Maiestie: may it please you the Prince Dyar-
nd Lady Cardonia may bee sent for, to take with vs
r oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane time
ach one goe put himselfe in equipage for the Combat.
reason saide the King, and presently hee commaunded
Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin de-
nded where they were that tooke part with the Count:
ereupon hee presented his Cozins, the one named
ron, proud and arrogant, and the other Edward, of selfe
equality. These two tooke their oathes with the Count,
t the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in
h sort as hath beene before declared: and olde Adrian,
ardo, and faire Cardonia ware the contrarie. But it is

true, and I will not denie it (said the Prince Dyardo) t
haue and doe loue Lady Cardonia, as much or rather
then mine owne selfe, yet neuer did I carry any other in
but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King
Quéene to like so well thereof as we could. But that e
intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count
liest in thy throat, and thy copartners that haue sworne
thée. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my good Lord, y
he to the King, if we be conquerers, the accused shall be
uered, and the accusers hanged: What say you Counte,
the King? Good reason Sir, the like doe we request if w
victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each shall helpe
fellow as he findes it conuenient? What else? said the C
that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron p
ded so well Palme-rin, that hee espied the Sword which
Damosell carried in the Casket, and brought to that C
as she did to others, which shewing the Count, hée said
aloud. Where did the deuils finde this Knight to giue
this Sword? Belike they gaue him strength to draw it
else hé might haue failed as many other did: the Dam
was vnwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which w
Palmerin being angry, returned Edron this round answ
I sée (Knight) there is in thée more brauerie and foolish g
then manly action, thou blamest me before thou knowest
but ere you and I part, Ile finde better reason to bestow
you, and beate better gouernment into your pate with t
sword that likes you not. This caused euery one with
behold Palmerin, the King remembring that he had serue
Sword, which none in his Court could deserue to conqu
whereupon he estéemed so well of Palmerin, as he comm
ded Edron to silence, and all to goe Arme themselues, bec
he intended that day to sée the Combat fought.

CHA

CHAP. XXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat, against the Counte of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.

After the King had commaunded the Knights to goe arme themselues, he gaue charge to foure of his ancientest Knights to see the Field prouided, and there to place the Judges, according to the wonted custome in Bohemia: the Knights being carefull of the Kings commaundement had soone prepared all things in readinesse, wherefore the King, his Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterprise. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they should be burned, if the count conquered. Soone after came the six Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one against the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Judges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Judges being placed, the Marshall summoned the field, and the Heralds bid the Champions doe their endeuour.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whose wordes sticking on his stomacke, called now for reuenge, wherefore couching his Launce, hee encountred him with such a full carriere, as his Launce passed through his body, and Edron tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had vnhorsed each other, Adrian so sore

wounded

wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had astonied each other with falles from their Horses, but they recouered themselues quickly, and with sharpe strokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the County to bee vnhorsed, and therefore to recouer his honour, hee came with great furie towards his enemie: which Palmerin perceiuing, stept betweene them, saying. To me County, to me, who will bid more for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of good courage, he stept aside, and thrusting his Sword into Palmerins Horse throate, enforced him quickly to take him to his feete: but all the worse for him as it fell out afterward, for Palmerin hauing beaten him out of breath, he flung away his weapon, and caught him about the middle, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knees on his belly, with his Sword soone take his head from his shoulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemie, and after many dangerous wounds receiued on either side, at length hee had the better of the day by killing his aduersarie. Then hee and Palmerin went to the Iudges, who giuing them sentence of honourable victory, they take off their Helmets, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Euill enough (quoth he) my noble good Friends, but the lesse account doe I make of my life, in that mine eyes haue seene due vengeance on mine enemies. Then was he nobly borne forth of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Pallace, and the Chirurgions searching his wounds, found them mortall, which newes did greeue the whole Court ingenerall: the good olde Prince yet being of some courage, was ioyfull to dye in so good sort, hauing defended his owne honour and his Sonnes, whome hee sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, saide. My Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for mee, good reason

is

is that his will be fulfilled, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truely serue and loue my Lord and King, bearing towardes him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceyue no offence at what hath passed betweene thee and mee: hauing come to passe (as I iudge) more by euill counsell, then any setled perswasion against vs. For the rest, to thy vttermost remember the good thou hast this day receiued by that noble Knight, who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. Syr Palmerin Death seized so surely on mee, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very nerely: I counsell you therefore to trauell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, where you shall heare tydings of that you seeke so earnestly. With which words he deliuered vp his ghost. And because it seemeth good, ere I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, this it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician: by meanes whereof few secrets were concealed from him: so casting his Kalender of most honourable Myths, he happened on Palmerin: and perceyuing the high Fortune he was borne to, chiefly, that he should proue a most notable Knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: hee was desirous to contract a Marriage betweene him and his Niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his Visions, as hath bene declared. Hee thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Vncles hard fortune, caused him to be buryed in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, the most excellent and stately that euer was in Bohemia, and ouer against him were hanged the bodyes of Count and his two Cousins, for his Trophe. Thus euery thing quieted, and the Funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes Wounds were so dangerous, as hee was constrained to stay longer then hee intended. In the mean space the King did them all the honor that could be

deui-

deuised, in hope to stay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin told him he must nædes go to the Emperour, about affayres of very great importance. I know your meaning well enough (saide the King,) you intend to goe combate with the Enchanted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchaunted Knight is it (saide Palmerin? on my Faith (my Lord) I neuer heard any one talke of him but you, Then wil I tel yee, (qd. the King) since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperour my Vncle, in the Citie of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy Knight, who had a faire Daughter, amorous of a Gentleman: and they re loue kept so secret as none knewe it but themselues. It so fell out, that her Father marryed her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any good acceptation, or chærfull countenance of the Gentle woman, the Bride-groome could haue none, so highly estæmed shee her first Loue: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as shee graunted him enterance into her Chamber, at an appointed time, where he murdered her Husband, and carryed the Lady with him whether he pleased. The bruit hereof was so soone spread abroad, as the Mother of the murthered Gentleman heard thereof: Whereuppon shee made her complainte to the Emperour, who immediately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselues to a very strong Castle, were in the ende so streightly besieged, as the Lady with her louer, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the trueth of their offence, sentence was giuen on them, that they should both be burned. The Father of this Knight offender so grieued hereat, as hee went to one of his Sisters, intending neuer to see the Emperour and his Court againe. His Sister seeing him in this extremitie, (as no malice or badde inuention is comparable to a Womans) deuised to Enchant one of her Sonnes, a good & hardy Knight, in such sorte, as hee should neuer be ouercome in Fight, but

with

with an Enchauntment of greater force. Besides, thæ gaue him a Bow, and a great company of empoysoned Arrowes, wherewith hee should kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whome himselfe pleased: which hee hadde not failed to haue done, but mine Vnckle Adrian vnderstanding therof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey is wonderfully perplered. For hæ is mounted on a Horse Enchaunted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that euer was fame, wherewith hee flyes into many out-places of the Empyre, committing a thousand harmes, and cannot be stayed, for whosoeuer comes to him Armed, Knight, or Peasant, all dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Vnckle will not giue him his eldest Sonne Primeus and faire Polinarda his Daughter, to doe with them what shall like his humour, hee will neuer departe the Countrey, till hee haue throughly ruinated it. By my Swoorde (my Lorde) saide Palmerin, in all my life I neuer heard so strange a tale, were I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Diuell, and deliuer the Countrey, if my strength will compasse it. Alas my good Friende (saide the King) it would much displease mee that you should hazard your selfe in such a daunerous aduenture: for where such diuellish Enchantments are, the strength of man (how great soeuer it be) doth not preuaile: therefore for my sake I pray you forbeare. Let come what please God (said Palmerin) for if I dye now, I shalbe excused for euer hereafter. Well sawe the King that hee could not chaunge his minde, therefore he left off any further to intreate him: and to long he thought he tarried for Ptolomes health, so desirous was hee to bee with the Emperour, hoping that his Combat with the Enchanted knight, would graunt him meanes to see and talke with Faire Polinarda. Wherefore when his companion had gotten a little strength, they toke their leaue of the King and the Ladyes, chiefely of the Prince Dyardo, and faire Cardonia: who after they

departed

departure had such successe in their Loue, as with the Kings consent the Marriage was solemnized. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on the way to Gaunt, where the Emperour made his continuall abode: the Enchaunted Knight so persecuting him, as he durst at no time came forth of his Castle.

CHAP. XXVI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court: and of the Combate between Palmerin and the Enchaunted Knight.

GOod expedition made these Knights in their Journey, till at length they arriued at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne then sciourned, not knowing how to depart thence, because the Enchaunted Knight watched him at all hours: our Knights being thus come thither, lodged in the house of a wealthie Burgesse, where they were entertained in very honourable manner. They were no sooner dismounted from their Horses, but the whole Cittie was on a sudden vproze, and the people ranne on heapes from one place to another: which made him remember what the King of Bohemia hadde told him, and presently hee imagined what after followed, for his Host in great feare, came running to him, saying:

Alas Syr, we are all vndone, the Enchanted Knight hath gotten the Gates of the Cittie, and in despight of the Guard hee is entred: Wonderfull is the harme that hee will no

do

, if the Prince Trineus and fayre Polinarda be not reskew . God defend such hard Fortune (saide Palmerin,) rather ill I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many thers in vnfortunate succesſe. With these words he toke s Launce, and galloped that way where hee hearde the tu ult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the En haunted Knight was, shoting his poysoned Arrowes at the indowes hee espyed open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde im in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might giue udgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his cou age, as presently hee marched towards his Enemie, who eld in his hand a persian Bowe, with an Arrow in it ready o shote, hauing a great sort more at his backe, in his Quy er: he was of vnreasonable stature, yet with a countenance both sterne and couragious, all which could not dismay Pal merin, but called to him in this manner. Proude Knight, that by the ayde of Diuells and euill Spirits, hast committed monstrous cruelties: It is now time that hee whome thou seruest should haue his preye, which is thy saule into endleſſe perdition. And so without staying for an answere, hee ranne aliantly against him: but the Enchaunted Knight taking his aduantage, shot an Arrow at him so violently, as it pier ced through his Armour to the bare flesh. Palmerin hauing broken his Lau ce, with an Iron Mace hee had, hee reached such a stroake to the Knight, as hee brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blowe falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the ground. The Knight hauing recouered himselfe, toke a Mace that hung at his Sad dle bowe, and came against Palmerin, who was nowe on foote likewise: So layde they on loade terribly with their Maces, that the Emperour and his Nobles, Lordes and La dyes, hearing the stroakes, came to the windowes, to see the Combat, little thinking that any one durst presume to med dle with his enemie: yet all this while the Knightes neuer breathed, although their Shields and Armours were very much mingled, and their bodyes wounded in many places.

And

And because Palmerin saw the fight endure so long with
Mace, he threw it down, and toke him to his sword, wh
with hee did so bumbaste him about the head, as hee
scant tell where to strike againe: but the knight on a
den lifting vppe his Mace, gaue Palmerin such a stroke
twéen the head and the shoulders, as made him stagger,
réele to and fro amazedly: yet comming to himselfe, and
ing the knight faint, with his great effusion of bloud, cl
with him, and casting his legge behinde him, threw him
the ground, when setting his foote on his brest to kéepe h
downe, with his Sworde he parted his head from his bod

What question were it whether the Emperour reioy
hereat or no? who for his whole Empyre would not he wo
aliue againe, beeing so well deliuered from his onely ensu
in the world, that could so moleit him and his Countrey wi
such mischieuous crueltie. And for to say soth, the Encha
ted knight was altogether inuincible: nor could Palmeri
haue thus preuailed against his wonderfull Enchantment
but that the three Sisters of the Mountaine Artisæria hig
ly fauoured him: as you heard before what promises th
made him.

The Combate beeing thus ended, and the Enchaunte
knight dead, the Emperour (giuing thanks to God for th
victorie) set open the gates of the Castle, and came forth hi
selfe to welcome Palmerin: who kneeling on his knee be
fore the Emperour, thus spake. Mightie Prince, such a
nowne haue I heard through the World of your exceedin
honor and bountie, as I haue trauelled many strange Coun
treyes, to come offer you my seruice: desiring your High
nesse (if my suite may séeme reasonable) to accept mee hence
forth amongst your knightly Seruants. Ah faire knight,
(answered the Emperour) it is for me to know of you, how
I may remunerate this vnspeakeable courtesie, for but by
you mine enemie had triumphed in my spoyle: so much then
is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as
no satisfaction is sufficient to requatiate. So taking him by
the

he hand, and perceiuing his body wounded in many places, ee conducted him into one of the faireſt Chambers in his aſtle, where hee was vnarmed, commaunding his Chi-rgions to take diligent care of him, becauſe in truth they uch doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed, ll needefull things for his health were applyed to him, and o coſt was ſpared to ſaue his life that preſerued the whole ountrey.

CHAP. XXVII.

low the Empreſſe came to viſite Palmerin, who kept his Chamber, becauſe hee had receiued ſuch dangerous wounds in the Combat with the enchanted Knight, and of the ſpeech he had with the faire Princeſſe Polinarda.

THe Empreſſe with her faire Daughter Polinarda, glad of the death of the enchaunted Knight, came to Palmerins chamber to viſite him, who hearing of their comming, caſt a night mantle about him, which the Emperour had ſent him, and came with great reuerence to elcome them: ſo deſirous was hee to ſee her, for whom hee d trauailed ſo many ſtrange Regions. In this place it is ceſſary that you remember, what gracious gifts the three tall ſiſters beſtowed on him, in the Mountaine Artiſæria, e of them granting him this ſpeciall fauour, that he ſhould highly eſteemed of her to whom he was deſtenied, ſo ſoone ſhe beheld him, which came to paſſe as here ſhall be decla-

red. Palmerin expecting the extreame of the Empresse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at the doore, falling on his knee, did with great humility kisse their hands: but the Empresse taking him vp in her armes, saluted him with these speeches. Gentle Knight, right happy may wee count our selues by your comming hither, the Realme being made desolate then it hath beene seene heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great iniurie the Knight did vs, whom you haue slaine, he hauing sworne the death of my children that neuer offended him: but God bee thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, which hee determined to inflict on others, for which great grace they stand so deepely bound to you as to their Father that first gaue them life, which by your prowesse you haue happily preserued: this second gift being of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second Father. Palmerin giuing eare to the Empresse salutations, had his minde more busied in beholding Polinarda, whose daintie regard so maistered his opinions, as head, heart, thoughts and all were now set to worke: yet couertly he shaped this answere to the Empresse. Madame what I haue done for you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great good will: for since the time I first had knowledge of my selfe, and before I receiued the order of Knighthoode, vnderstanding of my Lord the Emperour, and his honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated my seruice to him onely, and for this cause Madame came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said shee, that you can content your selfe to be one of his Knights, your deserts being so great? Very well Madame, quoth hee, and yours to so please your Highnesse to afford me such fauour. With my heart Sir, said shee, shall I entertaine you towards the Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will prouide better for you then I will speake of: and did it like you, I would accept you for a Virgins Knight here, and none other. Whereupon shee called her Daughter Polinarda, saying, Faire Daughter, this Knight as yet hath little acquain-

tan

tance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be good, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and for your owne part, loke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your seruaunt, and he shall be your Knight. And are you both agréed Ladies, said Palmerin? Heauen forsake mee if I refuse honour of so high account. And as they would haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake off their talke, and comming to the Empresse, said; Madame, I beseech you haue good regard to the health of this Knight, and let our Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchaunted Knight with his venomed arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath besides sore bruised his bodie with the weight of his Mace. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so neere him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his obiect more delighted, then his wounds greeued him, then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said. I pray you my deere Friend to bee of good comfort; dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed hee and the Empresse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whom loue had already so inueigled, that shee (being yet but tender of yeeres) found her selfe so restrained of her libertie, as shee scant knew how to dissemble this suddaine affection: and from that time forward shee became so sad and pensiue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceiued it, yet durst shee not presume to demaund, whence proceeded his strange alteration, but so circumspectly did shee regard the Princesse, as shee well noted the ground of her griefes. Whereupon it happened, that one time amongst other, they two being alone together, Brionella iudging that her Lady delighted to heare speech of Palmerin, now to hit the naple on the head, shee thus began. What say you Ma-

dame, (by your fauour) of the new come Knight: did you euer see a brauer and more accomplisht Gentleman? Upon my faith Madame, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wrought all her perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other Knights in manhode and Chiualrie. Brionella, answered the Princesse, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I euer thought as much though I kept it in silence: would God I had as great authority ouer him, as hee alreadie hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter so with you, saide Brionella? it should seeme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truth Brionella (quoth shee) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath preuented mee, I would aduenture to make him mine. In good sooth Madame, said Brionella, you two being united together in one reciprocall league of loue, well might it bee reported the most honourable match, and of the two noblest young Princes through the whole world: and seeing you haue made a choyse so worthie, dismay not good Madame, but proceede in your determination. Thus deuised the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no lesse in affection for the loue of Polinarda, whom hee had searched with so great paine and trauaile, and had now found with so high good fortune. If loue was so earnest with him before in his sleeping visions hauing not seene her, much more vehement was the impression now hauing her in presence. Whereupon the day following he called for his garments, and as he was making himselfe readie, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen sent him the good morrow, desirous to vnderstand in what plight hee felt himselfe. God Sir, answered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you doe my humble duetie to the Emperour for this great courtesie, and you may thus assure him, that (heauen be praysed) I feele my selfe in so good estate as euer I did. Which the Emperour hearing was highly contented, and sent to desire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (neuer before so thoroughly touched with the forcible assaults of loue) glanced his

many swéet lookes on the Princesse Polinarda, and breathed so many sighes, the secret Ambassadours of his heart, as it was a heauen to him to be in these passions. The Emperour and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meate, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as hee knewe not what countenance to vse: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easily iudge the cause of his dolour, whereupon shee presently presumed, that she had more interest in his thoughts then ere shee looked for. The like opinion conceiued he of her, yet was no other testimony deliuered on either side, then sad countenances, the reuealers of a tormented spirit. Thus continued these two louers, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladies fell to daunsing, in which delight and diuers other, the whole day was spent, till the Empresse and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was reuerently giuen: when Palmerin went to his lodging in such an agonie, as more likely to dye then liue, hee threw himselfe on his bed, where hauing sighed and sorrowed long time grieuously, at length hee brake forth into these tearmes. Ah Palmerin, vnhappie, wretched and most miserable, now art thou entred into such a Labyrinth, as impossible is it for thée to get out againe with life, but what should moue thée to so high an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is second to none? Alas, now doe I plainely see the small credite is to bee reposed in Dreames, and that the visions I saw in my Father Gerrards house, on the Mountaine Artisæria and else-where, are friuolous illusions, and of no account: with them may I ioyne the promise made mee by olde Adrian, who boasted to knowe so much of my fortunes, for loue is not of such power on my behalfe, that faire Polinarda either can or will make any reckoning of me. Then Palmerin resolue thy selfe suddainly to die, that this inuisible and consuming fire, which by little and little melts thée away, may bee extinguished, and

thy selfe eased. With these words hee breathed forth such an extreame sigh, as Vrbanillo the Dwarfe (being nére) heard him, who doubting least any new misthaunce had happened by the priuie wounds the enchaunted Archer gaue him, made haste to know the cause of this euill. Ah Vrbanillo, quoth Palmerin, I finde my selfe farre worse then dead. What my Lord, said the Dwarfe, now you ought to bee of best disposition, will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Emperour neuer gaue you bad countenance since your comming, whence then should proceéde this strange conceit? No no Vrbanillo, quoth hee, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his Maiestie. It is Loue my Lad, the strict commaunder of the stoutest mindes, hee hath conquered mee, and well I know I shall die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) so please you to tell mee how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand deathes if I doe it not. Vnderstand then my good Vrbanillo, said Palmerin, that this strange alteration, proceédes from the diuine lookes of my péerelesse Mistresse Polinarda, whose fiery beames haue searched so narrowly euer corner of my thoughts, as I must die because I loue too déerely. But couldest thou make knowne to her the least part of my insupportable berations, may be she would haue some pittifull remorse of my martyrdome: for well may it be iudged, that a Lady accomplished with so many vertuous perfections, must néedes bee stored with sweétnes, fauour and pittie. Not vnlike my good Lord sayd Vrbanillo, but doe you not remember how I was punished, when in the like case I ventured to solicite your loue to Laurana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I haue a day to liue, and am afraid to fall againe into the like danger. And this spake Vrbanillo with such a grace, as Palmerin could not but laugh, noting with what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon hee said. Thou néedest not be dismaid, if she that smote thée in thy sléepe be that Polinarda, for whose

loue

loue I am thus tormented, and for whom I was borne, as many haue enformed mee: I pray thee therefore speake to her, and dread no colours. It is good, said Vrbanillo, that you would haue mee more hardy then you are your selfe: speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not aduenture it for feare of my life. If thou doest it not (quoth Palmerin, assure thy selfe thou shalt neuer henceforth serue mee. Nay then (quoth the Dwarfe) I will rather put my selfe in ieopardie, to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will lose so good a Maister. I pray thee doe, said Palmerin, in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarfe) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady, and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to giue her his Dwarfe, and of the speech which shee and Vrbanillo had afterward together.

EArly the next morning Palmerin arose, and hauing walked abroade to contemplate his desires, returned into the chamber of presence, where he found Trineus the Emperours Sonne conferring with the Ladies: at which very instant the Dwarfe entred, whose bad shaped body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trineus came to his Sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you euer behold

a more proper Page to attend on Ladies, then this gamit Squire that serues my Lord Palmerin? In good sooth Brother, quoth she, he is farre vnlike his noble Master, yet would I like well enough if hee were mine. I beseech you Sir Palmerin, said Trineus, bestowe your Seruant on my Sister Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is yours, and his Maister likewise. Then called he Vrbanillo, who kneeling to vnderstand his Maisters pleasure, he said: Vrbanillo, I haue giuen you to my Lady Polinarda as her man, will you not serue her honourably and truely aboue all other? Yea my Lord, quoth he, neer after you, but you will I not leaue while I liue, although you would disdaine my seruice. God reason hast thou, said the Princesse, and well am I pleased it should be so: yet during the time of his stay here, you shall forsake him and abide with me. For that Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, I am well contented. Then looke you faile not, said the Princesse, henceforth to giue your attendance. These speeches were thus vsed as it were for pastime, that shee might thereby deceiue the iudgements of other: but her whole intent was, to knowe of Vrbanillo, if his Maister were affected to any other Lady, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard, a little before that loue had brought her vnder such obeysance, as did not the regard of honour withholde her, herselfe would first breake the Isle of her berations, rather then stay too long and not bee solicited. Many other deuises had the Ladies with Vrbanillo, who knew so well how to behaue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar amongst them: as hee would enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the Princesse Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Maisters messages. But at length shee preuented him in this sort, for being alone at a windowe in the presence Chamber, shee called the Dwarfe, and making her entraunce by other occasions, she asked him whose Sonne Palmerin was. God knowes Madame, quoth hee, for I doe not, nor himselfe neither:

neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was knight-
y Chevalrie bettter employed by any then by him, for since
he time of my knowledge, hee hath done such noble Acts, as
is not remembred that euer knight in this age did the like.
And then from point to point hee discoursed all that Palme-
in had done since his comming to him: And can you thinke
hen good Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) that hée is discended of
Noble linage? Trust mee Ladie, I haue my selfe heard
y many learned Magicians, and others, that they Diuina-
ions were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the Dwarfe thus speake on his Masters
behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her liking, no maruell if
heart and spirit were now enflamed: so that now shee could
not longer conceale what she had hitherto couered, and there-
fore said to the Dwarfe, I beseech thée Vrbanillo, by the faith
and dutie thou beares to thy Maister, Tell me one thing that
I desire to know of him, which shall tende to nothing but to
his honour and aduantage. You haue so Coniured me, faire
Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) as death shall not compell mee
to hide whatsoeuer you shall please to commaund, if it lye in
me to resolue you. Know then Vrbanillo, said the Princesse,
that I loue thy Maister as dearely as my Brother Trineus:
and am desirous to know of thée, what Lady it is he esteems
aboue all other: because when I know her, I may loue her
the better for his sake: Withall, that I may commend the
Ladyes happinesse, whose fortune is to be loued of so braue a
Gallant: Well perceiued the Dwarfe, that eyther now or
neuer was the time to bestirre himselfe, according to the pro-
mise he had made to his Maister: wherefore he answered the
Princesse in this manner. Beleeue me Madame, were it
any other, I would not reueale such secrets of my Lord as
you desire to know: but to you that are his Lady & Mistresse,
am content to bewray the whole. Suffiseth then Madam,
that hée loueth in such sort, that if the Heauens send him not
remedie the sooner, vnpossible it is that his Life should long
endure: for I see him so farre beside himselfe, and tormented

with

with so many passions, as euery houre his death is expe
What will yée Ladie that I say? He complaines, he fig
and day by day is in such dispaire for his Ladyes Loue:
happie might I haue counted him, had he neuer seene he
that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then N
narda were in doubt (not iudging her selfe to bee shée) it
easily be imagined, and presently was shée brought into
a peeplexitie, as the Vermillion colour in her cheeks bega
to chaunge, such sudden feares possessed her minde, t so m
sundry varieties of opinion thwarted her conceyt, as fain
would haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby
Dwarfe discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he dis
bled what he saw, and thus continued onward his discou

Now considering (Faire Madame) the high deserts o
Lord and Maister, may shée be esteemed happaie (as you
that shall cause the losse of the best Knight liuing this da
Ah Mistresse, if he dye (as God forbidde,) farewell the
flower of all true Nobleneſſe, and the most assured fri
to distressed Ladyes. Wherefore I beseech you pardon
I shall name her vnto you: and let mée intreate you to
with her so farre, that the courtesie wherein shée is indebt
so good a Knight as my Lord and Maister is, may be she
effectually, as that she would loue and fauour him, as hée
and hath very well deserued. Trust me Vrbanillo, aun
red the Princesse. when I know the Lady I will, t beſi
she do not regarde his passions as she ought, I will intr
her at my request to be more pittifull. These wordes p
red a sudden iealousie in her, that shee should promise to
ther what shee most desired herselfe: yet somewhat ea
to be resolued, she vowed to fulfill her promise, and then
desired him to tell her Name. So you will giue mee
word Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) not to take in ill p
what I shall say, I will satisfie your request presently.
lieue mee (saide the Princesse, I will not, rather pers
thy selfe, that herein thou dost me great pleasure. Ah
Princesse (quoth the Dwarfe) it is for you and no other

y Lord is thus tormented, it is for you that hée liues, and
es an hundred times a day: Swarte Ladie haue pittie on
m, and séeke not the losse of so good a Knight, who loues you
arer then his owne life. At which answere shée was sur-
ized with incredible pleasure, yet feigning the contrary, shée
ide: Is it I? And how long I pray you? By my faith
adame (quoth hee) that can I not tell you: But I haue
and him lay of a long time: more then foure yeares before
e was Knighted, hee vowed himselfe yours: since which
me, all his honourable Actions hath hée onely dedicated to
ur praise. So that for to finde you, hee left the King of
acedon, and his Sonne Florendos, with whom he was in
h estimation, as no man the like: yet that honour hée for-
ke to doo you seruice: and for your loue he yelded himselfe
vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe
ur Knight, if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda
o well heard the Dwarfe (albeit her heart floated in ioyes)
t could shée so well commaund her thoughts, as she séemed
make small account of his wordes: Notwithstanding,
urned him this answer. I promised thée Vrbanillo, not to
ceiue yll of ought thou shouldest tell mee, nor doo I: yet
uld I haue thée to regarde my calling, being Daughter to
igh and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour: But if it
so, that Palmerin thy Lord and Maister beares mee such
ciall affection, I must let him knowe by thée, that it would
e bene farre more séemely, himselfe to haue told mée, then
make thée Ambassadour in such secrete affayres: Neuer-
elesse, I mislike not of his honourable Loue and good will,
ereof I shal thinke better, when I know the effect is con-
nable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe)
ou would please to vouchsafe him time and place, hee will
ke you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both
r Destinies: which contrefe can no way impeach your
our. Why tell him (said the Princesse) hée shall haue me
lie heere in the Chamber of Presence, where hée may say
pleasure with safetie: In meane space I accept him as

my

my Knight, charging him that hée doo not departe the Cou
without any licence, if hée desire to doo me pleasure.

The Dwarfe well pleased with so good an answere, on h
knée kissing the Princesse hand, tooke leaue of her to retur
towards Palmerin: who méeting him by the way, in pl
conuenient, said:

How now Vrbanillo? what newes hast thou brought m
life or death? Maister (answered the Dwarfe,) as you h
good occasion to repute your selfe the most fortunate Knig
that euer bare Armes. Then palmerin embracing him, sa
Ah tell mee what they are: Hast thou spoken with diu
Polinarda? Takes shee any pitty on my consuming care
That doth she (my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) and cōmaun
you by me (if you be so vowed hers as I haue perswaded) th
henceforth you depart not the Emperours Courte, with
her leaue. Then recited hée the whole talke betwéen the
and lastly, the pleasure shée conceiued in so good tydings:
that shee accepted him onely for her Knight. Whilest t
Dwarfe continued this discourse, Palmerin was rauis
with such inward ioy, as with a great sigh, he saide: O h
uens, how doo you fauour mée? Now sée I well, that my se
rall apparitions on the Mounts of Oliues and Artifæria,
predestinations, ordained to me by your Gracious presen
I beséeche you therefore humbly, that what you haue prom
sed may soone come to effect, for the regarde of incompara
Polinarda. Then demanded he, by what meanes he mig
attaine to speake with the Princesse? Shee saith (qu
hée) that you shall haue her daylie in the Hresence, or in
Empresse Chamber, and there may you safely imparte y
whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tell y
For I vnderstand certainely, that the Emperour intende
matter greatly for your aduantage: he mindes to mor
to visite one of his Castles neere at hande, and there also,
passe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourn
So that there (better then any where else) may you and P
linarda conferre togither: therefore courage your selfe,

roe kepe companie with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himselfe will acquaint you with this Enterprise.

Now credite mee Vrbanillo, (saide Palmerin) thou hast done so much for mee, as I shall neuer recompence thee while I liue: but I pray thee tell me, did she not at the first take my message strangely? That did she (quoth the Dwarfe) when I perswaded her that you loued a Ladie in such sort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then she thinking it was some other and not herselfe, chaunged her colour marueilous passionately, but let it suffise you, that thee is as kepe in loue as you are or can bee.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, saide: My noble Friend, I shall make knowne to you what hath bene concluded in your absence. The Ladyes of our Courte haue bene so long lockt in, for feare of the Enchaunted Knight whome you haue slaine, as they haue desired to progresse a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them, I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a goodly Castle, enuironed with Woods and pleasant Meadowes, where may we hunte the wilde Harte and Boze, with other pastimes: but now haue I caused Scaffolds and other prouision to be made there for a Tourney, and fortie Knightes will I appoint in this Action, tenne against tenne, and the first Conquerours shall kepe the fielde against tenne other, that shall reuenge the tenne vanquished: So hauing all iousted, they shall fight at Barryers, with cebated swordes, and he braueſt Champyon shall haue a rich Jewell, which the Empresse hath prouided for that purpose. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my Nephew Galerino, on the Defendants side: for him do I esteeme one of the best Knights of my Courte: Will you not do thus much at my request? God forbidde (saide Palmerin) that I shoulde refuse any thing you please to commaunde. These newes were immediately published thorough the Courte, which made euery Knight speedily to prepare himselfe, hoping to be of that number of the fortie, that should performe

the

The Tourney: and thus they priuily imparted to their La-
dyes, how they would breake both Swoorde and Launce for
their Loue. Among whome Ptolome was not the last, for
he so affected the young Princesse Brionella, as he had made
her sole Mistresse of his hart, yet could he not find the meanes
to acquainte her therewith: But the next day, as she rode a-
mong the Ladyes, they had good leysure to conferre togither,
& before they arriued at the Castle, they discouered throughly vnto each other their Affections, promising mutually such a iust consent in Loue, as the one should bragge of the others happinesse. While they thus continued their louely and-rous discourse, Palmerin who had but newly presented him-selfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soone as hée came to her, the Empresse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horsebacke: Notwithstanding, before night, hee gained recompence for that disaduantage: for after Supper, the Emperour and the Ladyes went a walking, by a goodly Riuers side, there to dispose themselues, in the cole of the euening. Now was it the merry Maye moneth, when the Fields were richly decked with Natures Tapistrie, and Cupid gaue good opportunity to his Subiects, to contemplate they sweet and affable desires, and well came it to passe for Palmerin, while Trineus and Ptolome were conuersing with the Empresse, that hée taking his Ladie and Mistresse by the Arme, walked with her amongst the faire Flowers, and seeing the time and place serue him so well, trembling, (as surprized with a vehement passion) thus beganne. Madame, your gratious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in good part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet vnknowne among Courtly assemblyes, should presume to make knowne a secrete to you, which my-self dare not imagine without reuerence, and death can cause me declare to none: nor may I procéede without some assurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And although the words of my Dwarfe haue acquainted mee with your Princely fauour, sufficient to expell

fro

r and ſuſpition of repꝛoſe: yet ſuch is the height whereto
ſpire, as the greateſt Monarch in the Woꝛld can ſcantly
rue, then well may I eſteeme my ſelfe vnwoꝛthie. But
bting whither your woꝛds were ſuch, oꝛ that my Dwarfe
rhaps as hée often may doo,) hath repoꝛted moꝛe then hee
giuen him in charge: I am deſirous, (truſting on your
ignitie and ſpeciall fauour aboue all other) to vnderſtand,
our good pleaſure be ſo highly to honour mée, as hencefoꝛth
ccept me foꝛ your Knight and Seruant. And if ſuch vn-
erued fauour and grace may happily fall to my lot, I ſhall
only acknowledge, that Foꝛtune hath directed my courſe,
he onely place of honour, but ſhall haue good occaſion be-
, to make knowne by my Knighthood, that I am the Fa-
rite of the moſt fayꝛe Pꝛinceſſe. Hérein good Madame,
ſhall not diſſent from reaſon, if I hauing loſt my Liber-
(by beeing onely yours,) want the Modeſtie that ſhould
lde mée in your high regarde: Therefoꝛe may you ſwéete
dy, in mine excuſe, accuſe Loue, and your celeſtiall beauty:
h ſtronger to commaund mee, then I to gainſay. My
arfe hath let you know (as he told mée) part of the paine
ndure foꝛ your ſake, which you cannot but thinke well of,
hat my Deſtinie ſo commaunded mée, long time befoꝛe I
e oꝛ knewe you, not alone in Viſions, but by manifeſt
itings, ſo that in ſearch of you, I haue ſuffered ſuch tra-
, as maruell it is that Nature could make mee able to ſu-
ine. Notwithſtanding, I account all right happily beſtow-
if I may but gaine fauour in your gracious Eyes, without
ich, it is vnpoſſible foꝛ mée to liue: Foꝛ there is no parte
elling eyther life oꝛ ſpirite in mée, that is not vowed to
r only ſeruice. Theſe woꝛds were dipt in teares, and de-
red with many a bitter ſigh, which moued Polinarda to
y compaſſion, as taking him by the right hand, ſhee began
laye with his Fingers, her trembling teſtifying her ſecret
ations: and then bꝛeaking off Palmerins diſcourſe, as
thought to haue continued longer, thus anſwered. Syꝛ
ght, it ſéemeth by your countenaunce that you deſpayꝛe

of

of something, or else haue more fortitude then I can
ceyue.

Esteeme you mée of simple iudgment, that knowing
Valour and Knightly perfections, I should not account
selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion? Let it suffice
that what Vrbanillo told you, is true: and in regard o
paine you suffer for my Loue, and fancying mée so firmely
you do: Beliene mée good Knight, you feele no griefe,
it is as familiar with mée, so that what thought you ha
mée, the like haue I of you, as time and the vnspotted lo
beare you shall witnesse: in meane time promise me n
departe my Fathers Court without my consent. An
cause I see the Ladyes approching, referre wee the rest
some other time, when wee shall haue more leysure to
ferre together. And tell mée now, if you bée determin
Ioust to morrow? That will I Madame, (quoth he
shall please you to commaund mée. In soth (said she) I
not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tou
will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you weare
Bracelet, as a signe of my Fauour, and pledge of my L
So taking off her Bracelet, she gaue it to Palmerin, wh
ceyued it with no little content: And so concluding the
miliar talke, because many Knights and Ladyes came
them, they walked where the Emperour and the Emp
were deuising with Ptolome and Trineus. Now be
darke night drew on, and the Euening dew was danger
they returned to the Castle, entending the next day after
ner to beginne the Tournament.

CHA

CHAP. XXIX.

How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of that which happened afterward.

AFter the order of the Tourney was set downe by the Emperour, as you haue heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre to goe to it, not doubting to performe such chiualrie, as his Ladies fauour should be worthily honoured: wherefore hauing prepared all his necessaries readie, immediatly after Dinner, accompanied with none other knights brauely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he entred the lists royall. And espying his Mistresse Polinarda in the window with the Empresse, after he had done her humble reuerence, he began to manage his horse with such braue manners, as euery one delighted to behold him, but especially the Princesse, whose heart Loue had thoroughly conquered, so that she gloried to be beloued of a knight so worthy and commendable, as that her eye was neuer from the obiect of her best desires. And marking his sheild, she beheld in a field of sable, a siluer hand fast closed, the import whereof caused her to meruaile, in respect what had passed betweene them before, and gladly would she haue knowne the meaning, but the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore perswading her selfe for the time, she was content in seeing her Bracelet, which her knight wore vpon his right arme. And after many courses and lofty poynts done by Palmerin and

other Knights before their Ladies, among whom Ptolom[illegible] shewed so correspondent, as the presence of his Lady Brionell highly prouoked him. Then entred the Prince Ganareno, Nephew to the Emperour a knight of no small reckoning amongst the Allemaignes, and with him nine other, in most sumptuous armour: and their braueries likewise tended to their Ladyes (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the Trumphets and Clarions summoned the field, euery knight prepared himselfe in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win common applause, as her loue who had the soueraigne power ouer him, seeing Ganareno ordering himself to run first, tooke a strong launce, and encountred him with such puissance, as Horse & man were both ouerthrowne and very sore brused: notwithstanding, he was soone recouered by his companions, and in a Chaire caried forth of the field. One of his Knights would needes reuenge his misfortune, and was himselfe in like sort serued: in breefe, the other eight had all one payment, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from his saddle. Palmerin ioyfull of his good successe, was departing away with his company, when one of them thus spake vnto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue saued our labour, and got the honor that wee desired. The time will come (quoth Palmerin) when you may doo as much for me: but for this time (if you please) you may excuse me. All that were present, as well Lords as Ladies, marvailed at the valour of palmerin, and among the rest the Emperour, who said aloud, that her neuer knew a more valiant Gentleman. polinarda being so neere as she heard her Fathers wordes, and had her selfe beheld his high good fortune, was sodainely sollicited with such affectionate pleasure, as forgetting her selfe, and where she was, she thus spake to Brionella indifferent loud. What say you faire friend? doth not Palmerin worthily deserue to be loued? By my faith Madame, answered she; I neuer saw knight giue such rough encounters with the Launce, as he did to Ganareno and the rest of his cōpanions. Polinarda would

haue

ane proceded further, but there entred ten other knights, the formost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that he ran not at the first: and then entred ten knights more, of whom the formost was Cormedes an Allemaigne knight. They ranging themselues in order, ptolome and Cormedes bravely encountred, but neither were vnhorsed: which greeued Ptolome to do no better in presence of his Lady: wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and three more of his fellowes after him for companie. Which when the Duke of Lorranyes Brother perceiued, a knight well accounted of in the Countrey, desirous to recouer the honour his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seemes that these Grecian knights are come to rob vs of the honor that is ours by inheritance, in vnhappie houre were the Allemaignes borne if they suffer it; and so couching his launce, met Ptolome with so full a carrire, as losing saddle and stirrops he fell to the ground, and foure more of his knights after him had like entertainement, but a hardy knight of the Emperors named Menadus, met the Dukes brother so rudely, as downe hee fell to the grounde with his saddle betweene his legges. There were many braue encounters with the Launce, to vanquish one another, and all for the loue of their Ladyes, who delighted to see their knights so bravely behaue themselues. The Iust finished, each one alighted, and with their blunt Swordes fell to the Barriers, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they would not suffer one another to take breath: especially ptolome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, to winne the honor he lost in the Iousting. And new a fresh entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom Loue and Fortune were fauourable, ranged among the thickest, and with his sworde made way among them valiantly: at length hee came to the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, and so canuazed him about the pate with his blunt Fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly astonied, charging

him to speake no more in disgrace of the Grecian knights. The sport ended, the knights withdrew themselues into their Chambers to be vnarmed, and each knight wrapping himselfe in his Mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies lurey, for shee had sent him a very rich one, and so comming into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Leleque me my Lord, I account the Prince hath that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Soueraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient seruant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Empresse, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and couered with pearles and stones of great value, which she presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour he had wonne in the Tourney, and said to Polinarda; Faire Daughter, I am sure you will bestowe some gift on Sir Palmerin, in that hee hath so worthily deserued. These words raised a sweet blushing in the Princesse countenance, not a little reioycing that hee whom she loued, had carried away the prize from all the other knights: so with a prettie modest smile, shee tooke a chaine of Gold from about her necke, saying, See here Sir Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tye and chaine you in such sort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours seruice. Palmerin with exceeding contentment receiued the chaine, and on his knee humbly thanked the Empresse and the Princesse, to whom hee spake as followeth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in such a prison, and neuer will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his vassaile that hath power to commaund me. This answere pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that he desired to haue Palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherefore he said to Polinarda, you haue done well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, for now he cannot escape away when he list. So the Tables being couered, the Emperour and all the knights of the Tourney sate downe to meate, where much talke was spent as concerning the successe of all

all sides, but Palmerin and Polinarda had enough to doe to view each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betwæne them the message of their passions, yet so discreetly shaddowed, as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knights and Ladies went to daunsing, and afterwards to their chambers, because the Emperour had commanded the next day another Tournament: a briefe report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no braue chiualrie. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vaine to tel, because the former day makes knowne his worthinesse, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so good sort, that Brionella was as proude of him as the Princesse of her knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his desert and her loue. Thus while the Iousts endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiarity with Palmerin, because hee had deliuered his Sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All passtimes thus finished, the Emperor returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his Mistris to appoint him time and place, where they might more priuatly discourse on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunity.

CHAP. XXX.

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Brionella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin.

POlinarda not forgetting the promise shee made her friend, to meete him in some place where they might argue on their loue, determined to discouer her affections to Brionella, the beloued of Ptolome: well perceiuing, that without her helpe, shee could not attaine the end of

her desires, wherefore without any longer stay, shee thus began with her. My chosen friend, I would make known one thing vnto thee, which death can compell me discouer to no other, wherefore thou must haue care to keepe secret my speeches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any paine thou takest for me. Faire Princesse, said Brionella, in that you do me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to mee, rather will I die then fayle one iot of your commaundement, and therefore assure your selfe, that what you declare shall neuer be discouered. Then Polinarda reuealed to her the loue shee bare palmerin, what passions had tormented her, and in what extremitie her desires hadde driuen her: and therefore (sweete friend (quoth shee with a deepe sigh) find thou the meane that I may priuatly talke with him. Brionella admiring the earnest loue of the Princesse, knew not readily what to answere, but seeing that by this meanes shee might more easily conferre with *Ptolome*, whome shee likewise intirely loued, thus spake. It is no wonder Madame, you beeing so incomparable, as I know no Prince liuing of whom you are not worthie, if you haue resolued your loue on noble palmerin, in that there is no knight in the world better deserues you, his rare chiualrie beeing such, as it cannot otherwise be, but that hee is descended of royall linage, beeing accomplished with so many speciall perfections. Therefore Madame, so like you, I haue deuised well for your purpose, as thus. You know my chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety confer with him at pleasure, which you may let him vnderstand by his Dwarfe, and appoint him time as you shall thinke conuenient. This counsell did not a little content the princesse, because she longed to talke with her loue, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoint *Palmerin* his time. Now was the Chamber of Brionella ioyning to the Cittie wall, and had a goodly prospect into the fields, and *Palmerins* lodging was next vnto it, facing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily

easily passe betweene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little garden, brauely decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trées. The time appoynted, Polinarda called the Dwarfe to her, saying. Vrbanillo, thou shalt go to thy maister, from mee and after thou hast saluted him with my manifolde well wishings, will him this night to come secretly to my Lady Brionellas chamber, where at the window wee may safely talke together: and bid him not misdoubt my Lady Brionella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe maist conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarfe with polinarda to Brionellas chamber. where hauing séene the windows, and glad to carrie such tydings to his maister, beeing well assured how they would content him: hee departed, and tarried not long on his message, because palmerin thought each houre a yéere to heare from his mistresse: wherefore hee beholding the Dwarfe comming, tooke him in his armes, and demaunded what newes hee had brought him? The Dwarfe with a chéerefull countenance thus answered. My Lord, Fortune spéede you as luckie, as the newes that I bring you bo well deserue. By this beginning palmerin perceiued that hee brought such tydings as hee long loked for, which was how hee might speake with the Princesse: wherefore embracing him againe, he commanded him to make report of that his swéete mistresse had giuen him in charge. Then the Dwarfe deliuered how the Princesse had great desire to see him, and where shee did intend to speake with him. Which when palmerin heard, filled with vnspeakable ioyes, hee recorded the wordes to himselfe with many iterations, and the more often hee spake the words, the more his delights increased. But tell mee (quoth he to the Dwarfe) diost thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Thereof doubt you not my Lord, sayde the Dwarfe, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the Princesse

her selfe, in company of Lady Brionella shewed it me. How am I beholding to her, said Palmerin, for this high fauour, which else were my death if I should be denied? Vpon this hee called Ptolome, to whom hee imparted euery circumstance, which Ptolome reputed for his great auaile: this offering the meane for him to visit Brionella, and therefore they concluded to goe together the night ensuing, to the place appointed for this louing encounter. The houre of rest being come, and euery one in their Chambers as best beseemed, Palmerin, Ptolome and the Dwarfe, remayned together, and seeing the time readie to countenance their enterprise, toke each of them a rich Mantle, and with their Swords vnder their armes, went out at a window vppon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat dangerous, yet loue had so encouraged them, as without regard of danger or fortune, they came to the window which the Dwarfe had shewed them, not seene by any. Polinarda who was most attentiue, hearing the trampling of their feete, saide to Brionella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Casements, shee saw Palmerin and Ptolome attending like diligent Seruants. If then both parties were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world more contenting them then the sight of each other. And truely Palmerin and the Princesse had great reason, for beside that their fatall destenie did so prouoke them, their equall natures were so commendable and correspondent, as though they had neuer seene, yet were they borne to loue together. Now was Polinarda very brauely accoustred in a glorious night mantle, and such soft white silkes, as shee shewed brighter then the morning Starre, her sweet pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt vppe as it were into a second heauen, hee remained silent a long time, not able to speake a word. The Princesse was likewise in the selfe same conceit, and so ouercome with regard of her Paramour, as she continued mute, and was loth to giue the onset. Palmerin ashamed to accompanie his Lady with such

such silence, beganne thus mildely to Court his Mistresse.

I did neuer thinke, (fayre Madam) that Fortune would honour mee with such extraordinary fauours, directing my course to your noble Fathers Courte, to be thus entertained into your gracious seruice, hauing no deserts in mee to induce you to your choyse: but it may be in respect of some good report by such, to whome I account my selfe highly beholding, hauing thus founde the place where I was preordinate to loue, my Starre hath thus appointed it, and withall, to make me the happyest man liuing. And it may bee Madame, that such as enuie not my happinesse, haue acquainted you with some of my exteriour actions, which God (not I) hath brought to passe: but they, ignorant of the entire and seruent loue I beare you, could make no iust reporte thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to bee comprehended: Besides, the deapth and wonderfull nature thereof not to bee measured, therefore to be buryed in your heauenly opinion, which how ample so euer you please to graunt me, the more am I bound both in dutie and affection, which in despight of enuie and his confederates, shall remaine immoueable, and pleade the continuall loyaltie of your Knight and Seruant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine person hath beene presented me in shape, I would therewithall discourse infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now beholde. How many Countreyes and Cities? What perils and dangers haue I past to finde you, prouoked on still with neuer chaunging loue? If this then were sufficient to make mee runne through a worlde of damages, I leaue it to your iudgement (Sweete Madame) what it may bee now, seeing with mine eyes what I dreamed on before, and now may with safetie say, (incomparable Beautie. Here hence then proceedeth, that these my extreame Affections haue ouercome all other partes in mee, not once able to imagine how many reuerend opinions I vse of you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemencie, will pardon my preiudicate conceyte, because

cause being not mine owne, but yours onely, I may easily offend. These words moystened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Bloud of his heart, deliuered manifest euidence how truely hee loued the Princesse, who bearing him company in all argunments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affections, and the great trauell you haue sustained in searche of mee, and no other certainty do I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to mee: For proofe whereof, this present attempt may suffise, that against my duety I should be seene thus secretly, in a place so suspicious, and the time so vnnecessarie. But yet if I haue offended herein, then accuse those seemely perfections which I haue obserued in you, and the confidence I repose in your good Conceyt, coupled with the honourable estimation that is generally reputed in your vertues. Pardon me (sweete Ladie) said Palmerin, if by my longing desire to speake and conferre with you, I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to do you seruice, constrained me to be thus importunate. The matter is farre from any desert of offence (quoth the Princesse,) for hither are you come onely by my commaundement, to the ende that we might see one another, and talke of such things as nearest concerne vs: and therefore resolue your selfe good knight, that I esteeme you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Princesse and loyall Friende, to dye, rather then any other shall be Lord of me. Which very words, so rauished his senses, as very hardly hee could sustaine himselfe: Whereupon Polinarda put forth her hand out at the window, which he in often kissing well marking, beheldc the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah (sweet Madame, (quoth he) this is the token that makes mee the happyest man this day liuing. As how I pray you (said shee) what know you hereof? Then Palmerin discursed all his Dreames and visions, and briefly raune through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shielde of Sable, wherein

in was figured a Hand fast closed together, signifying the same hand I holde at this present, because this hath the same marke the other had in figure. In truth (said the Princesse) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shield, wherin I sawe a Siluer hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, being now a little gladde in that you haue so satisfied me. After wardes Palmerin made knowne vnto her, the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelyhood. O God (quoth shee) happy be the time of this meeting: Blame me not my Lorde to be thus surprized with your Loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appointed: This will cause me to liue in more hope of good successe, then before I did, and that our amitie will sorte to such ende, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseech you, the marke on your face, howe neere it resembles this on my hand. Shee fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, lifted vp his comely locke of haire, and saw them both shaped in one forme, wherefore suddenly setting away the Light, shee embraced Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweet kisses on his amiable Character. The like louing kinde salutations passed betweene Polome and Brionella, at an other Casement of the Windowe, with solemne Vowes and Protestations, neuer to faile each other in their loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuersing on their desires, till Fortune afforded them better opportunitie: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the dwarfe came to his Master in this manner. My Lord, I thinke you can neuer finde time to make an ende: Will you haue the day light preuent you, and so discredite you all? In sooth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to departe from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarfes words, and continued on in amorus deuises: But the Princesse, a little more fearful then hee, remembring the dwarfe said true, and loath to be seene suspitiously, said: My Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you fayle not of your promise: Let vs

visite

[illegible] you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome take leaue of their Ladies, and passed to their Chambers without suspition: The successe of theyr Loue you shall vnderstand hereafter, as time and place shall fitte for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choyse of delights, we will returne a while to another discourse.

CHAP. XXXI.

¶ How the King of Fraunce kept a Royall and magnificent Courte: And how his Sonne Lewes became enamoured of the Duchesse of Burgundie.

During the time that the Emperour of Allemaigne lined in this happinesse, accompanyed (as you haue heard) with manie hardy Knightes: there raigned in France a mightie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wise, and vertuous, who had three sonnes, wherof the second was the hardiest Knight at Arms, being named Lewes.

This King Agariel, the more to honour his Knights and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keep open Court for all commers, as none of his predecessors euer did the like before him, and therefore sent abroade his Heralds, Gentlemen of hie Escuirie, and others, to summon his Lords and Barrons of France, that on a day appointed, they would all meete at the Courte.

And because none should be ignorant what hee intended, hee requested that all Gentlemen professing Armes, at the Feast of Easter following, should repaire to Paris, being the

head

heade and chiefeſt Cittie of the whole Kingdome. The Queene likewiſe aduertized all Ladyes and Gentlewomene at whoſe commaund euery one obeyed, ſo that in fewe dayes, the Court was well furniſhed with Lords and Ladyes: nothing nowe intended, but delights and Courtly Paſtimes, which made the Duke of Bargundie likewiſe repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed Knight, hauing matched in Marriage with the King of Denmarkes Siſter, a young beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education: the Duke hoping to haue iſſue by her, becauſe by his firſt Wife he could not haue any. The King aduertized of the Dukes comming, commaunded his Sonne Lewes with an honorable traine to go entertaine him, which hee did, ſo that many ſolemne reuerences paſſed betweene the Duke and him, as alſo to the Ducheſſe, whome as he welcomed with many ſalutations, ſo did he earneſtly contemplate her excellent Beautie, reputing her farre fairer then the reſt, and on a ſudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made Loue into his heart at the very firſt ſight of her. In this great and vnlooked for ſeueration, hee conducted her to the lodging which was prepared for the Duke, diſſembling ſo well as hee could his new deſire: But ſo vehement was his oppreſſion, as without returning again to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes being thus alone by himſelfe, (Loue) not a little triumphing of his new preye, tormented his thoughts with ſo many conceytes, as all the night he ſpent in ſighs and dolorous laments, his minde ſtill trauelling by what meanes hee might compaſſe his intent. Sometimes, he thought it impoſſible in reſpect of the Duke, then againe as eaſie, becauſe of his Age, accentiable to yrkeſome in his eyes, for the liuely flouriſhing youth of the Ducheſſe: all which imaginations wrought ſo diuerſly in him, as his ſpirite forſaking counſell and reaſon, made him breake forth into theſe exclaimes. Ah Heauens, haue you formed Beauty with ſuch Excellencie, as to cauſe mee endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, too lauiſh were

you

you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but vtterly disdaine thee, thou hast an acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death chastise thy boldnesse. Yet mayst thou be deceyued in thine owne opinion foolish man: perchaps in offering her thy seruice she may chaunce to accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likely to dye: how happy were it for thee to be his Executor, for his Lady? Dispaire not then man, for things thought impossible are easiest oftentimes in performance. In these and such like teares he spent the night, and seeing the faire morning salute him at his Chamber window, he arose, intending that day to bewray his passions to the Duchesse: and knowing that the Duke would goe visite the Quéene, accompanied with many Knights, he came to bidde him good morrowe: Which the Duke taking very kindly, requited him with many thanks, ignorant that for the faire Wife, he was so courteous to the olde Husband.

The Duke hauing taken his way to the Quéene, Lewer kept company with the Duchesse very mannerly, wayting opportunitie to discouer his affections, and reuiewing her beauties so perfect and rare, not able longer to holde began thus. It is marueil Madame, if faire beautie should be so bitter, as a man cannot surfette but he must néedes dye. The Duchesse not knowing of whome the Prince spake, nor as yet regarding that hee was in Loue, answered. In soth my Lord, the Ladie hath small reason, that thée should vse you so hardly, if you meane it of your selfe. In briefe Madame (quoth hee) it is you haue wounded mée, and none but you can ease my afflictions: if then (sweete Ladie) you retaine such pittie, as all your other Excellencies shewe you to haue, you will not disdaine to giue mee remedie, which if you do, for euer I remaine your Knight and loyall Friende. And in mine opinion Madam, you cannot well refuse my suite, seeing hard Fortune hath bene such an enemy to you in Marriage, the Duke being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fresh, and dainty as may bee: Hée more méete to keepe companie with Antropos the mortall goddesse, then liue with a saint of

so

so rare perfections. But had my lucke bene such, before you were espoused to haue knowne you, I would with Malou haue hindered your Weding so, or Fortune should haue fowr ly denyed me: For such is my religion in Loue, as better death then discontent, and had I bene Lord of Europe, you had bene Ladie. Notwithstanding Madame, so like it you, I may be your Friend and knightly seruant: for loue wants no wiles to compasse desire, and my sute is modest, if you count it not vnseemely. The Duchesse, whom sweete loue could easily intice to follie, hardly might resist a present Conquest: Wherefore chaunging countenance, and not daring to reueale what shee gladly would, saide. Must mee (my Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste Wedlocke is so monstrous, as you can haue no priuiledge to aske, nor I to graunt, and therefore content you.

This answeare, albeit it was sharpe, and scant pleasing to the Prince, yet loue so perswaded him, that the Duchesse had another meaning then she bewrayed: For, noting her countenance so full of change, he guessed that some sparks had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began againe. I beseech you Madame accuse Loue, if I haue spoken to your disliking, yet hope I to see the time, when I shall make knowne how great my affection is to do you seruice: and continuing this talke, he brought her to the Quenes lodging, Loue following them both so narrowly at the heeles, as the Duchesse was no lesse affectionate, then Lewes was most passionate. Which when he had gotte some light off, in hope to purchase his desire, shee sollicited her in more secrete maner then shee was wont: so that being one day in place where they might familiarly talke, Lewes persevering in his enterprise, declared what torments shee suffered for her Loue: Whereuppon the Duchesse not onely by the Princes reasons, which were perswasiue, but as well to mittigate her owne oppressions, thus answered: Great is the force of your perswasions (my Lord) but greater is that of loue, which hath made me yours: So that what you requeste I cannot denye, and although it

stand

ſtand not with mine honour, yet ſuch is my fortune. Let me intreate you therefore to conceale this Loue ſo diſcretely, as none may know of it; eſpecially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that ſhall yelde me content, and make me happy.

This anſwere ſo highly liked the Prince, as neuer man thought himſelfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her againe manifolde thankes, he ſayde:

I ſweare to you Madame, by the diuine force of Loue that gouernes vs both, to be for euer your Knight, and neuer ſhall any other deſire abide in mee, then you ſhall like and well allow off: for otherwiſe I were not worthy this ſpeciall fauor. The Ducheſſe thanking him, departed: and thencefoorth ſo ſecretely ſhadowed their Loue, as none ſuſpected that the Prince loued the Ducheſſe.

CHAP. XXXII.

¶ Of the enterpriſe of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Ducheſſe of Burgundie.

LOng continued the King of France this ſtate in all Magnificence, there meeting many noble perſonages, as well Strangers as of the Realme, that it was marueilous to behold, as alſo the Ladyes and Damoſels that accompanied the Queene: who on a day in the Preſence chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and proweſſe of the flouriſhing braue young Courtyers: among whom the Prince Lewes making one, eache one ſpake in behalfe of his Ladies beauty, yet concealing theyr names to themſelues, till better occaſions might cauſe them deſcreedly to be knowne. All this talk the Prince well marking, who for the Ducheſſe

loue.

lone was depriued of libertie, threw many swéete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burst her mould, whereupon hee sayd, Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatted on beautie, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or seuerally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vppon, may not be equall with one that I know, euen shee that is Ladie and commaunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest starre in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with priuate opinion) I vse these speeches, I will make good my wordes by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoeuer that dare say the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I will be in open fielde in my Tent, where I will erecte a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bee her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be vanquished, there shall they leaue their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my vnhappy Starres so crosse me, as I lose the credite I would bee loth, the conqueror shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse bee mounted, if hee meane to maintaine her with such conditions as I doe mine. And hee that last shall accomplish these eyght daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraitures of the Ladies, which by him or any other all the sayde time haue beene gained. And this libertie shall bee granted, that hee which receiues the foyle with the Launce, shall Cō-

bat with the Swoorde (if hée please) before hee yéld. Newth at this mine enterprise may be openly knowne, and put in execution as the vertue requireth: I will send Horsemen through all the prouinces of Christendome, that all Knights willing thus to aduenture, shall bee hérre receiued. His speeches ended, the Gentlemen present could not meruaile sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the Prince Lewes, and the daunger whereinto hee thrust himselfe, yet not knowing who was the Ladie hee would thus aduenture for: but shée beeing present, perceiued that the Prince in honour of her loue, toke in hand this perillous hazarde, wherein she conceiued such secrete content, as the passions of loue hauing penetrated her heart, made her feare his misfortune, which she would not for her life. In this assemblie was present the Duke of Sauoye, a young Prince, braue, hardie and courageous as might be, and estéeming so well of himselfe, as he thought no Knight in the world could vanquish him, who to aunswere the Prince Lewes, arose and thus spake. My Lord, I would not willingly haue entered the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre outreach your selfe, as shee whose beautie you maintaine, is more perfect then all other Ladies: but shee that is the commaunder of my heart, is such a braue accomplished Ladie, as (in truth) her beautie may not be matched through the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I sweare by the order of my knighthode, that the morrow after you haue finished your eight dayes enterprise, I will enter the same fielde, and auerre against all Knights, that the Goddesse to whom I am dedicated, excelles all other Ladies in her heauenly gifts: and hee that dare maintaine the contrarie, vnder my Swoord I will make him confesse it. All such therefore as will make proofe of their valour, shall find me there in my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes after to sustaine the same quarrell in plaine Combat, either at the Launce, the Mace, the Swoord, on horsebacke or on foote, at his choise. And though I vanquish one Knight, it

shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but presentlie take him in hande that shall follow: and bee it my fortune to be foyled by him, hee shall keepe the field in manner as you my Lord deuised. And to the ende all may be the better executed, please you that in such places where your intelligencers shall come, my enterprise may likewise bee declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my Ladie will make speciall account of me. The lady for whom the Duke of Sauoye thus attempted, was Daughter to the King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he loued intirely, and aboue all things desired in marriage: which to compasse, and to honour his Ladie, hee thus offered the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending to go thorow with their intent, concluded betweene them, that the Duke of Sauoye should breake it to the King, to gaine his good will: whereuppon the Duke departing towards the Queenes Chamber to find the King, espied him at verie good leysure walking im his Garden, to whom hee went in all hast, and on his knee thus began. So please it your highnesse to graunt me one boone, I shall be bound to continue the loue I haue borne your Maiestie, which is to prolong my life in your seruice, as the most forward knight in your royall Court. The King who had long time fauoured the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answered. Demaund my good Cozin what you please, and it shall bee graunted. Then the Duke deliberatelie discoursed, what the Prince Lewes and hee had intended for the loue of their Ladies: wherewith the King stant content, and merualling at this hastie enterprise, said. Why Cozen, do you imagine your selues able to maintaine so hard a taske, in resistance of so manie hardie knights, wherewith the world is now plentifullie stored? Beleeue me, in manie Countries are Ladies of greater beautie (I doubt) then is at this time in our Realme of Fraunce. I promise you, I hardly like what my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my word is past, you shall not now bee hindered: do therefore what your

selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwaies, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, answered. Wee doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladies, to ende our affaires with fortunate successe: but I holde wee should giue ouer, and not go forward without promise, we might worthily be reproued of shame and dishonour, the most villainous reproches that can be to any noble heart.

The King perceiuing the earnest affectiō of these two yong princes, and that to deny their request would be more hurtfull then to graunt: commaunded him againe to proceed with their intent, with such lucitie against all strange knights, as what losse or victory happened to them, they must be content with all that fell out. The Duke not a little ioyfull, kissing his highnes hand departed, and immediatly acquainted Prince Lewes therewith, but now the queene vnderstanding her sons enterprise, sent for him, & with sad countenance thus spake. I would (my son) that the intent of you and the duke of Sauoy, were eyther a while deferred, or vtterly forgotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a further consequence then you expect. For thinke you, that by all your forces & Ciualties, the beautie of your Ladies shall be any iot increased? no beleeue me: but if they loue you as loyall Friendes ought to do, as greatly will they dislike your enterprize, as feare the daunger whereinto you may fall, a matter causing other desire then you thinke on, and more offensiue (perhaps) to them, then any honour you may winne can please them. Lewes who by no meanes would be dissuaded from his conceit, answered. God Mother, if for no other feare, this matter shall not be reuoked, in regard of the shame, and neuer dying dishonor I shall gaine thereby, which makes me desire a thousand deathes, rather then not to be so good as my worde: therefore perswade your selfe good Mother, that albeit her beautie for whom I enter the Combat, cannot bee more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet such

such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her swéete lookes shall deliuer me strength enough to ende my taske, without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse (enflamed with loue) hearing these wordes on her behalfe, must néedes speake, and thus began. I know not (my Lord) who is the Ladie you loue, nor what are her vertues, but héereof I can assure you, that she is highlie beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrarie) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beautie. Madame (quoth the Prince) the trauaile I shall take, and the bad fortunes may befall mee, are little and of no account in respect of her gracious deserts, therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, desiring no other recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assured, nothing can séeme difficult to me, no, were it to dye in her diuine seruice. And as hée would haue continued longer, the King (not yet throwly content with his promise past to the Duke of Sauoye) entered the Chamber, by whose countenaunce, Lewes well knew he was mal-content with him, wherefore falling on his knée, hée said. My Lord, no one is ignoraunt, how all my wel-fare and reputation consisteth onelie in your Maiestie, as a Prince and Father, the most vertuous that I know: which great good in some part to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter vnworthie of dislike, so please your highnes (of your accustomed bountie) to excuse and accept it in good part, in respect that such as are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to bee more prompt and readie to all magnanimnous actions, then their inferiors, chéefely in prowesse, chiualrie, and déeds of estimation. What brought such renowne to Horatius, Mutius Scæuola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a number more of Romaine Knights, if not the couragious folowing of occasions offered? What made for euer immortall the fame of Marius the Romaine Citizens, Hanniball the

 Cartha-

Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, if not the vndaun-
ted valour of their minds, deliuered in their deeds of kin-
lie consequence? Assuredlie I beleeue, that their Fathers,
Vncles, and auncient progenitours neuer made them noble
or ought renowned: what then? onely vertue, the ver-
formator of all nobilitie. For this cause my good Lo-
and Father, hauing now opportunitie, as my Cozin ye Duke
of Sauoye hath informed you, may it please your grace
permit my endeuours with fauour, to the ende I may de-
liuer perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from you
heroycall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat mode-
rating his former opinion, answered, Trust me Sonne, fai-
well you know how to disguise and couer your folly with
vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, an
beit as your Cozin and you haue requested. See in mean
time that you prouide all needfull occasions, that when th
day comes nothing bee wanting. Lewes humbly thanki-
his Father, arose, euery one present not a little reioyci-
because they feared all would be squandered. Then be-
the Lordes and Ladies to conferre together, and the D
chesse departing to her lodging, beeing manned by t
Prince, did not (as I thinke) repent her selfe of her lou-
a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) w
do the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse feared
the thwarts of Fortune, that she would worke her disg-
by some bad coniectures or wounding reports, said. I kn
well (my Lord) the good will you beare mee, without
further shewes or confirmations by actions so daunge-
which I had rather die then behold, and therefore wha
euer you shall performe, will condemne mee as vnwo-
of so good deserts: in this respect you shall therefore gra-
me one thing, which is, that aboue all you haue care of y
selfe, else will perpetuall discontent cut short my date,
ing bereaued of the honour of my greene desires. P
Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fort
not doubting to follow the deuise of a Ladie so vertuous,

your swete words prolong my life, else ere this had death robd you of your knight. The Duchesse hereto with an amiable smile, answered. I must not lose you yet good Prince, for may I lengthen your life, it shall be for euer. Many solene thankes the Prince returned, and by this time had brought her to her Chamber, where hauing baise lamain, departed.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Sauoye, sent their Heraldes and horsemen into all partes, to make knowne to all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their Combats.

THe Prince Lewes ioyfull of the King his fathers consent, but of the gracious answere of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched immediatly his Heraldes into all the prouinces of Europe, who executed their charge with such diligence, as there was no court or Emperor, King, or Prince, but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes. So that one of the Princes Heraldes, accompanied with the King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Sauoy, came to the Emperors Court of Allemaigene, which then was furnished with a great number of Lordes and Knights, being there to solemnize the day of his byrth, but especially Palmerin aboue all the rest, tryumphing in the loue of his Mistresse Polinarda. The Heraldes being entered the great Hall, found the Emperour sitting in his chayre of estate, with many Princes, Barons

and noble personages about him: who graunting them
bertie of speech, the Herald of Fraunce began first in the
manner.

Illustricus and most redoubted Emperour, the cause why
we thus presume before your Maiestie, is by the commaun-
dement of the vertuous yong prince Lewes, son to our dread
Lord Agariel King of Fraunce, as also of the Duke of Savoy
his Cozin, so good a Knight as may well commaund: what
our message is, so please your highnes to call all your knights
in presence, because it chefely concerneth them, we with ho-
tie will deliuer it. The Emperour presently called for all
knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who desirous of the
newes, were not long in coming, before whom he said. Dread
Lord, the prince Lewes of France my maister, commends him
to your Maiestie with this Letter, may it please your grace
to command it to be read, and you shall sone see the effect of
our Embassage. The Emperour caused his Secretarie to
read it openly, and because it contained what you haue heard
alreadie, it shall bee needlesse to waste longer time in talke
thereof: but the letter being read, the herald thus proceeded.
The prince my Maister (worthie Emperour) giues the
Knights of your Court (as else where) to vnderstand, that
hee entends to proue by deede of Armes, how no Ladie
in the world is comparable in beautie to the Ladie he loues,
which hee will bee readie to maintaine in Combat the first
of May next, and seauen dayes following, in his Tent be-
fore the Gates of Paris, there will hee verifie it against all
commers that dare auerre the contrarie. After ward heere
hearsed all the conditions to bee obserued in this Combate,
and the King of Armes to the Duke of Sauoy, made like
his Maisters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The
Emperor mer uailing at this message, said. Without doubt
the Ladies had need to be fayre, and my Cozins your Ma-
sters valiant and hardie, else it is doubtfull how such an en-
terprise will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers,
and theyr fortunes daungerous, neuertheless I desire the
issue

ssue may sort to their honour. The Lordes and Knightes haue heard your Message, and I iudge some of them will prouide to be there, because they prize the beautie of their Ladyes at as high a rate, as your Maisters do esteeme they? faire Friends: yet let them do what they thinke most expedient, because they are olde enough to make you answere. As for me, you may salute (on my behalfe) the King, my Brother, and my Cozins, to whom I send thanks with all my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeuours. All this while the Knights conferred togither, with diuers iudgements of their pretended Combats: Some of them were eyther fearfull or too forward: others well aduised and prouoked with discreete courage. Among whom reputed we Noble Palmerin, all pensiue, his eyes fixed on the ground, and not a word, hauing in his spirite discoursed how bitter the diuorce would be of the Eye from his sweete obiect: in theende concluded the Combate, perswading himselfe, not in Christendome, nor in the other three habitable partes of the Earth, eyther Empresse, Queene, or Ladie, was more accomplished with perfections then his gracious Mistresse Polinarda. And in respect of this Embassage, it seemeth to him iniurious, and a dishonour not sufferable, if hee should not iustifie the truth, and haue so good occasion: whereupon he desired a thousand deaths, rather then he would deferre so braue a Voyage: and so on his knee before the Emperour, he thus beganne. Gracious Lorde, and my most worthie Patron, I intend (with your good liking and leaue) to depart with all speede possible, to see the Ieustes and Combates of Fraunce and Sauoye: Let it not therefore displease (for the honour of Chiualrie, that I leaue your noble Court a while, but may commit my selfe to this iourney, with your fauourable opinion. The Emperour very loath to let Palmerin goe, answered: In good soth Syr Palmerin, I greatly doubted so soone as I heard these newes from France, that it would not passe without your presence, which displeaseth me, not so much for their follie, as your absence, which is and will bee

to

to me greater griefe then you iudge: but let me intreate that thy returne may be spéedie, and stay no longer then thou hast good occasion. I would gladly know, would you graunt it mee, what Lady shee is, for whome you thus aduenture: you néede not Palmerin hide it from mée.

My Lord (qd. he) the Dame for whom I enter the Combate is such, as none may or ought compare with so singular, rare, and (aboue all) vertuous, as neuer would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe should haue power to plucke mée from my duetie. As for my stay (the Iousts once ended) within one moneth or sooner, I intend my returne to your Maiestie: and let me intreate you not to feare any thing in my iourney, because I go for your Honour, and my Sworde shall ring on the stoutest creast, the euer continuing honors of the Emperour of Allemaigne. The Emperour vnwilling to forgoe him, and loath to hinder knightly Chiualrie, saide. Without question Palmerin, the Lady is indebted to you, and you declare vnspeakable Loue, that for her Beautie you deliuer your selfe to such great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thyrst after such applause with your absence. But séeing that you will néedes to Fraunce, happie Fortune goe with you, and make you victorious in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Mistresse, the French will not braue so much on the seuententh of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Prouide that before you departe, you demaund and haue all things for your iourney, as well for such as goe in your companie, as for your owne necessarie prouision: and some will I appoint to attend on you, that may preuent any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obeysaunce thanked the Emperour: and taking his leaue for that Night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Iousts were at hand. Nowe was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, and had not yet re-

ceiued

ceiued his order of knighthood, hee hearing of Palmerins departure, was marualous desirous to beare him companie: whereupon hee knæled before his father, intreating him not to deny him one request. Demaund what thou wilt my Sonne (quoth her) I graunt it thee. Then I beseech you good father, said hee, to suffer mee, sir Fraunce with noble Palmerin, that I may bee acquainted with the courtesie and ciuilitie of that nation, not doubting but soone to deserue my knighthood. And yet if before I receiue my order, I see these high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily they may entice mee to follow their vertues: beside, if now I loose so good an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compasse the like commodity, therefore (good father) let mee not bee denyed. The Emperour offended for his rash promise to his sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince promised to go so couertly, as none should know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, saying. I see Syr Palmerin, you shall not go alone in your voyage, for my sonne Trineus desires to be your companion: for which cause I commit him to you, and desire you to conceiue so well of him, as at your returne wee may be all merrie together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the maister of his horse, commanding him that all things might bee in readines against their departure: all which was done with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared, they tooke their leaue of the Emperour & the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victorie and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twentie other knights, a great number of Squires and seruants in good equipage, they iourneyed towards Paris without any hinderance by the way, or matter of memorie.

Now before wee passe any further, you shall vnderstand, that after the Heraldes of the Prince of Fraunce and Duke of Sauoye were departed, and that Palmerin had obtained

tained leaue of the Emperour, the Princesse Polinarda ad-
uertised hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden de-
parture, wherefore calling Vrbanillo, the Dwarfe to her, sa-
saide: Vrbanillo, thou must goe to thy Maister, and bid
him this Night to mete mee at our appointed place, that I
may conferre with him, of a secret nerely concerning mee.
Which when Palmerin hearde, the earth being couered with
her blacke mantle, and euery one in their dead sleepe, he called
Ptolome and Vrbanillo, who were all well acquainted with
this loue-walke, and being there in presence of theyr Ladies,
the Princesse with a great sigh thus beganne.

Alas my Lord what minde is this in you, thus to bowe
towards Fraunce, and to leaue mee alone sadde and solitarie?
Alas, not content to hazard so long a iourney, but also a dan-
gerous Combate beside for my Beautie, which is a thing of
so slender estimation, as may not Parragon with the Ladies
of Fraunce, beeing Pereleslesse (as I haue hearde) among them
of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, more comfort and con-
tent it is for mee to haue your companie, then to be crowned
Mneene of any Realme conquered by your worthy vertues
and prowesse. Therefore (sweet Friend) I intreat you with
all my heart, and by the vnfained loue you beare mee, to leaue
such daungerous Enterprises, where death is comonly more
frequent then life. These words came with such amiable con-
iuration from the Princesse, as Palmerin, (though loath to
be disswaded) answered. Let me preuaile with you so farre
good Madame, as not to mislike my Enterprize for your gra-
cious Loue, for the honour you haue done me, in making me
your Knight, I prize at no lesse value then my dearest blood,
and should I be helde from these French exployts, vnworthy
were I to bee your Seruant: in that (as you well know) no
Knight but carryes the honour of his Ladie in such account,
as hee preferres that before his owne life. If then Madame,
in religion of this office, I absent my selfe for a while, I shall
accomplish nothing but my dutie, whereto your selfe bound
mee, and I hope to execute with such successe, as you shall

heare

eare the prize of Beautie, not onely from the faire Ladyes Fraunce and Allemaigne but from all Christendome, yea, e whole world, may I liue to trauell it.

Do not then (sweete Mistresse) mislike, if I absent my lfe, for a cause so reasonable, & continue me stil in your fauourble conceit, as hee that was borne to do you seruice. And beit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguish, perswaded of your rare arguments, I caine my selfe with tience yelde to reason, beeing present with you alwayes, that I carry your diuine image in my soule, and leaue hart, , and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many deuoute kisses, and olome had like paine in perswading Brionella, yet this ntented them in the ende, that the honour of their trauell s the renowne of theyr Beautie: and so with forced con- t they most louingly departed.

The nert morning, the Princesse sent Palmerin an Ar- ng-coate of greene Veluet, embrodered all ouer with great ientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of e, and in the midst of each starre a costly Emeralde: and ad caused her Picture to be most curiously drawne in the est Arabian-golde: her face and hande formed wonder- y nere the life, and all her Lineaments very singularly ioned, and this portrait caused her to be set in a faire Lit- couered ouer with Crimson-veluet, which hee had prou- onely for the purpose, and so set forward.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

¶ How the Prince Lewes came to see the Duchesse Burgundie : And what happened.

SOone as the Heraldes and Poyseu of Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke Sauoye hadde dispatched theyr Cha their Lordes gaue direction to prepare things in readinesse so sone as might but yet the Princes affection to the D chesse did so torment him, as heed compassed new meanes to conferre b her, that she might know the passions he endured for her l

At length it came to passe, that the King and the Duk Burgundie, & diuers other Princes, rode forth on pleasur gether, and returned not againe for two dayes space, w made him thus beginne with the Duchesse, I neede no you Madame, for you know it well enough, how contin ly I languish in remedilesse affections, till now this oppor nitie puts me in some hope of comfort, that you perfor so solemne promise, will deliuer me out of this extremitie. Wherfore faire Hiktrille, since time and occasion hath p ted it, and Fortune (by Nature froward and inconstant) nours it: Let me intreate you to take the benefite of b least hereafter we compasse not the like againe.

My Lorde (quoth the Duchesse,) you must thinke I more yours then mine owne, and make that reckonig of as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then for me uing as I loue) to flie from that which loue commaunds to fulfill? Let it suffise you then, that the regarde of h hon

...defended, I am ready to do ought may agree with your ...ing. What happened afterwards I leaue to your opini... but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwith...nding, vertuous Ladyes haue power to resist such moti... though time, occasion, and such amorous solicitings did ...it them: but such may bee accounted more diuine then ...ane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophee, in ...race of the Temptresse Venus. But this tlitle discourse ...much dissenting from the matter, is written in reproach ...ch young dayntie Wantons, that so vainely attend on ...r ouer-fond and vnchaste desires: And may likwise be ...arning to vndiscreet olde men, that they choose theyr Pau...le fit for theyr foote.

But now is come the first of Maye, the day to begin the ...terprises of the Princes of France, and Sauoye: Lewes ...ntertaine the Duchesse Loue, begunne with such aduan...e, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. ...erefore this day was his Pauilion erected neere the Cit... Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the ...rance thereof was placed a goodly Monument of blacke ...rble, curiously set forth with columnes of white Marble, ...thicke embossed with golde and pearle. At the side of ...Pauillion was placed another monument of greene Jas... adorned with many Bases, Pillars, and antique Ima...e of Golde, whereon hee intended the straunge Knightes ...came, should place the figures of their Ladyes. On the ...r side was a seemely place appoynted for the Judges of ...Fielde, who were the Dukes of Orleaunce and Burgun... Princes highly esteemed for their Nobilitie, and in their ...nes had bene hardy and aduenturous Knights. Many o... Tents and Pauillions were that day there set vppe, as ...for straunge Knightes that came, as for Noble men and ...tlemen of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince ...ely mounted to the Fielde, accompanyed with many ...g Princes, Knights, and Gentlemen: the Heralds and ...s of Armes ryding before, Drummes, Phifes, Trum...

pets

pets and Clarions sounding, so gallantly as made the
deliuer a most sweete Eccho. Before him in a very
tuous Coach, was carryed the curious counterfeit of the
chelle, so superficially set forth, and with such perfec
Arte, as though it had beene the Duchesse her selfe.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious
Armour, all ouer grauen with most artificiall Flowres
mounted on a Courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the bes
ners of Europe, which made way with braue and lofty
tages, as did not a little delight the beholders: one o
chiefe Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and an
his Lance. What neede I make further report of the p
ces triumph, Hee comming to the fielde with such Equip
as well beseemed the house from whence he descended, an
beseemed a louely Knight in presence of his Ladie: wh
her Fauour had sent him that morning, a costly Gyrdle
nished with Rubyes, Diamonds, great Emeraulds, an
ther vnualuable rich stones, with a Swoorde so good as
Knight woore, and therewith rode he gyrded to the Field
fore he went, the King his Father thus spake to him:

My Sonne, this day and all the other following, Fort
speede thee so well, as thou mayst winne the honour my h
doth wish thee. My most neede, (answered the Prince
hope before the sennight be finished, to accomplish your d
effectually, so fauour me shee that may command me. Sa
uing the King, hee came to the place appointed for the C
bate, the Iudges placing themselues where they should
the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where hauing his Pict
picture set on the appoynted place, he commaunded the tr
pets to sound, and a Herealde to proclaime, that no Kn
bearing Armes, should bee so hardie as to enter his Li
except he first graunted his Ladie to be the most faires
ture in all the Worlde: and if any were so stubborne not
confesse it, by knightly prowesse he would force him to d

The Herald hauing done his charge, and the Iudges
sed the Conditions to bee openly read, the People di
tha

themselues in conuenient places, and the Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen betoke them to their tents and Scaffolds. The first that entred the fielde against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his foure Squires conducting before him in a great gorgeous litter, the Statue of his Mistresse Daughter to the King of Arragon, the fayrest ladie in all Spaine, and for whose beautie hee tooke in hand this quarrell. After him came foure other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shield, and the fourth his gauntlets and launce: and comming to the monument appointed for strange ladies, caused the portrait of his lady to bee placed thereon: then comming to the princes Tent, said. I know not lord Lewes, if ouercome with glory, presumption of your strength, or ouerweening your selfe, you haue made this large enterprise, to Combat with the best approoued knights in the whole world, in iudging no fairer lady, to bee this day living then your owne: for mine owne part, I am not so troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strength of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes feeling himselfe greeued with these iniurious speeches of the Count, answered. Proude knight, I am ashamed to heare thy iudgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for matter of so light moment, as though I would not iustifie against thee and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, for that time thy pate and thy body is thoroughly bumbasted, spoke to thy selfe, for I intend to deceit. So mounting on horseback, and prepared as it had beene to a warre mortall, encountred each other with such furie, as their Launces flying in shiuers vp into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shields, their Horses and their heades, as they were both dismounted to the grounde. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, strong

and well disposed knights, made them quickly beginne the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexteritie, as it was hard to iudge who should haue the honour of the Combate. But Lewes beholding the representation of his Lady, and considering how so excellent and fauourable to him, tooke heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigor) so laide on the Counte Durcell, as in short time hee brought him vnder the mercie of his sword, when holding it against his throate, hee sayd. Peremptory knight, if now thou confesse not my Lady to excell thine in beautie, thy vndiscrete head shall raunsome thy folly. The Counte (for all this) would not answere one word, by reason of the debilitie he felt himselfe in, hauing lost so much of his blood, as for the greefe he conceiued to be thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not contented would haue taken his head from his shoulders, but the Iudges of the fielde came to him, saying. My Lord, you ought to forbeare, hauing brought your enemie beyonde his owne defence: your victory being sufficient to content you, for his death. The Prince perswaded, entred his Pauillion and ioyfull of his conquest, commaunded two Gardants of the field, to take the figure of the Princesse of Arragon, and place it at the feete of the Duchesse counterfeit: which was done incontinently, and the Counte Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions tooke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Soone after came a knight of Myllaine, who giuing such defiance as the other did, was in the ende constrained with great shame, to confesse vnder the conquering sword of Lewes, the imperfection of his Lady, and her stature placed by the Princesse of Arragon. The same day were fiue great Lordes of Italie brought in like subiection, and so the tryumph ended. The nexte day, when the first that came into the field was a braue Gallant of Spayne, a knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a vaine glorious oration made (as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his

fortune to the triall of his launce: where hee sped so ill, as hee was vnhorsed, and in the following Combate likewise receiued the foyle. After him seauen other knights of Castile proued as vnfortunate, their ladyes pictures all reuerencing the Duchesse, who beeing not a little proude of her knight, and the memorable renowne hee witnessed of her beautie, I leaue to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towards the Prince, who seeing no more readie to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweete mistris of his high good fortunes.

CHAP. XXXV.

Of the Combate betweene Prince Lewes of Fraunce and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.

GReat pleasure did the King conceiue, and all the nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when hee was entred his Tent, an English knight (no lesse braue in tearmes then the other) defied the Prince, and betweene them begonne a daungerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the king with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queene and the Duchesse of Burgundie, came to their standing, and vnhappily beheelde the foyle of the English knight, the Duchesse hauing him confesse her beautie, and beheelde his Ladyes portraict placed vnder hers. But now the curagious Duke

of Gaule named Crenus, came bravely mounted into the field, doing his dutie to the King, Quéene, and Ladies, who not knowing him, by his Armour iudged him some great Lord, in that no knight before caused so good opinion generally, nor came with brauer countenance into the field, hee beeing indeede a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a knight at armes worthily proued. The Duke (as all the other had done) caused his Ladyes to counterfeite to be placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admiration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent beautie it was adorned withall, the workman hauing performed such exquisite perfections, as it had beene the Ladie her selfe naturally liuing: while the Squires were thus placing it on the monument, the Duke aduaunced himselfe to Lewes, in this manner. The ouermuch selfe conceit (Lord Lewes) of minde but easily-acquainted with matters of difficultie, hath often beene, and yet is the cause to plucke great personages more low then they expect: in that men haue seene them deceiued of their intents, and rewarded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This I speake to you, hauing heere begun a businesse, the end whereof will bee more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath beene: for Europe is sufficiently stored with hardy knights to allwage your presumptious opinion, and Ladyes much more faire and excellent, then shee whom you contend for. And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regarde of my Lady and mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I enforce you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daughter to the King of England, for vertue, for beautie, and all diuine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before such a leasing (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a Sonne of Fraunce, eyther will I consent to be peecemeale torne in sunder: and before fayre Phœbus haue paced out houres iourney, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride and arrogancie. By the soule of king Arture, said the Duke, looke thou garde thy selfe well, for I haue, with my com-

r, abate the pride of a brauer man then thy selfe, and ere
neet two part, I meane to trie if I can do it againe, there-
ore resolue thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life)
will not fauour thee. Without any further speeches they
ncountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes
as throwne betweene his horses feete, and he for England
t his stirrops, but recouered himselfe well inough by the
ayne of his horse: then hee seeing his enemie got vp a-
ine, cast himselfe out of the saddle to haue taken his ad-
antage, but Lewes preuented him, and came marching a-
inst the Duke with his Sword drawne, who staied him
us. Me thinks Prince of France before any worse be-
ll thee, thou wert best to yeeld thy selfe, and remember
at our Combate beginnes for the excellentie of beautie.
y God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not
dwade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore
to, and hee that hath the faireſt friend shall soone bee
owne. In this great choller hee reached the Duke such a
oke on the head, as made him set one knee on the ground,
t recouering himselfe quickly, and both thorowly angry,
y layde on each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of
e beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for mat-
of speciall value, the defence of their owne reputations,
honor of their Ladyes, whose loue was more precious
their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager
ges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes hauing
ued more then twentie wounds on his body, feeling
selfe faint, fell downe before his enemie, saying. O
le heart of Fraunce, the true succeeder of thy famous
ceſſours. The victorious Englishman setting his foote
n him, saide, Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my
e to excell thine in beautie, it costs thee thy life, a matter
ing pleasing to me, in respect of the chiualrie and singu-
prowesse I haue found in thee, as also this magnani-
us enterprise of thine, which in dispight of thy foyle, and
y selfe, shall make thee liue for euer. But Lewes made

no answere, eyther for his weakenesse, or sorre to fulle
of his misfortune, wherefore the Iudges came, who gra
ting the Duke victorie, desired him to proceede no furth
which hee honourably granting, was as ioyfull of the
quest, as the Duchesse sad and pensiue, thinking Prin
Lewes had beene slaine outright: whereforе she flung a
to her lodging, not tarrying for the king or any of his
dies, who likewise departed the field in marualous sorr
seeing their Son so pittifully wounded: but aboue all,
Duchesse made more lamentation, then shee would h
done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what
thought secretly, should by her greefe bee openly suspec
comforted her selfe so well as shee could: and being by
selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, shee thus b
thed forth her mones. Ah trecherous Fortune, enem
all actions of regarde, why hast thou suffered the man th
most fauoured, thus to bee vanquished: and (which is mo
be pitied) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull trompe
seeing thou hast offered him so much wrong, doo mee th
uour to beare him companie in death, that liued and di
honorably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that
hath wounded him, and make not thou experient of t
ineuitable stroke, vnlesse thou wilt doo as much for me.
false and flattering Sonne of Venus, is this the gue
thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully?
ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she
began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are caus
of, but my most vnhappy selfe, when (prouoked by my
tye) hee tooke in hand this enterprise: but if it bee so (
Friend) that enuious fate deale so hard with thee,
mayst thou bee reuenged on her that caused it. And
these words shee fell betweene the armes of one of he
dyes present, whom shee specially trusted, who thus
to her. Why how now Madame? will you perswade
selfe no other wise? beleeue mee there is no remedy bu
must change your conceit. What will you forget

life? it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if hee whom you loue and endure these paines for, should vnderstand hereof, in stede of seeking his health, you will shorten his daies, if (as you say) hee liue not without your welfare. More requisite is it that you go comfort him with your chearefull presence, then thus to bee the argument of both your deathes. Beside Madame, if my Lord suruiue, is no doubt hee shall, what may hee presume? trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you seeke to discouer, what most of all beseemes you to conceale. Alas (my Friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for mee to content my selfe, seeing what estate hee is in, onely for my loue? But let me die, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour bee blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat bee aduised by thee, and I will go see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To breake off this talke, came an Embassage from the Queene, to intreate her come to her Maiestie: which she did, and went with the Queene to the Prince lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of griefe, with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceiued, that any one should see what wounds he tooke by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbad any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death was better passed ouer, which was within short time, when the duchesse by her often visiting him, conuerted his sorrowes into many ioyfull conceits. But because this history appertaines not onely to his deedes, or the loue of the Duchesse, wee will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after hee had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the traditions of the fielde, taking the portrait of his Ladye Briola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stoode, hanging it among the other conquered Ladyes. That day diuers other knights came on behalfe of their Ladyes, whom

the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, a
his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agn
who now was seated as paragon of the field.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the Duk
Gaule, and of the successe thereof.

IN the same day that the Prin
Fraunce was vanquished by the D
of Gaule, arrived at Paris Palm
Trineus, and their traine, but the c
bate was first ended, wherefore
commanded they? Squires to p
they? Tent. Palmerin vnderstan
that the duke was conquered, greeued not a little, in tha
came no sooner to win the hono? of the Prince: yet kn
ing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour th
arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, hee contented h
selfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince T
neus, in diuers arguments of the Combate betweene Le
of Fraunce and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly comm
ded of Palmerin though hee were ouercome, because he
so brauely done the two former daies against all the kn
that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleepe, t
king on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning,
commending himselfe to God in his prayers, hee put on
Coate of armes his Lady Polinarda gaue him before
departure, and toke the counterfeit of his Lady in
armes, not thinking any of his knights o? Squires
thie to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus

other Allemaigne Lordes, entred the Lystes with so braue a gesture and countenance, as euery one commended him for a good Knight. And hauing placed the Picture on the accustomed Monument, as it had beene to the liuely creature her selfe, she thus beganne. Ah perfect myrrour of all beautie, vertue, and excellencie, resolue thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the Worlde, in that your Knight craues a thousand deaths, before hee giue consent to the contrarie: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present fauour, as he durst venture on a whole Armye, to kepe his religion in your diuine seruice. These wordes were spoken so low, as the Duke of Gaule heard him, wherwith not contented, he answered. What now Knight, demandest thou (conge) of a Ladie to defend her Beautie? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou be no better prouided. For all that Syr, said Palmerin, I hope to make you graunt what I say, and that there is not a fayrer Ladie liuing, then hir whose figure thou here beholdest, otherwise I shall constraine thee to verifie it, whether thou wilt or no. That shall wee soone see (quoth the Duke: So departing into their Tents to be armed, and ready to Ioust, they met so valiantly together, as both of them brake their Launces bravely without mouing each other, and taking newe Staues, encountered againe, where the Duke was vnhorsed, and Palmerin very sore wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the ende Palmerin ouercame the Duke, and holding his Sworde ready to cut off his head, said, Knight thou art dead, if thou graunt not my Lady to excell thine in beauty. Ah Syr, (saide the Duke) vnhappy be the houre that you toke in hand this voyage, to depriue me of that whith made me the most happie Knight of the World, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, seeing Fortune hath bene so aduerse to mee? Thus filling the ayre with his regrets, the Iudges came, desiring Palmerin to saue his life, whereto hee consented: which words were more bitter to the Duke then

death, who in these complaints was ledde into his Tent by his Squyres. Palmerin not forgetting the honour due to his Ladie, take downe the Image of Agriola, and sette his Ladyes in the rowme, saying: Now are you in the place Madame, which is your owne by right. This victorie was not a little pleasant to the Frenchmen, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his ioye knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the reuenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquecour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for his present as his good will, and so continued in his deuoire to his Ladyes Beautie, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of foure French Knights, and the submission of their Ladyes portraitures: yet about all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen Knight at Armes, and neither Frenchmen, Italian, Spanyard, English-man, Romane, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes, but still he bare away the victorie, and Polinardaes Picture their Ladyes obeysaunce. The last of the eyght dayes, came into the field the Lorde of Albret, greatly esteemed for Prowesse and Chiualrie, and hee would defend the Beautie of his French Ladie: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprise, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could bee deuised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allemaigne Lordes were highly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his companie to bee lodged in his owne Pallace, where the Queene and her Ladyes would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by mante intrestes with Trineus, vnderstood her Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King vnderstood, that Trineus was the Emperour of Allemaignes Sonne, and all

this

this honourable Companie came from his Fathers Court, their Welcome cannot be sufficiently sette downe, nor Palmerins prayses effectually rehearsed: whome the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In good sooth Syr Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happie, that is honoured with your knightly seruice, but aboue all, the Noble Emperour of Allemaigne. My Lord (qd Palmerin) it likes you to speake your pleasure of mee, yet did I neuer knowe knightes more worthy in fight then your Country-men, among whom your deserts may not escape vnreported, no more then the dedes of Scipio can among the Romanes. Manie other honourable and Familiar spéeches passed betweene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladyes Figures, that were brought to the Jouستes: Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, hauing no second, but faire Agriola of England, the goddesse and Mistresse to the Duke of Gaule.

CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ Of the Combate which the Dukes of Sauoye and Lorrayne had togither, for the beauty of their Ladyes: and what was the issue thereof.

YOu haue heere before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Sauoye, for the beautie of his Ladye, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, hee should maintaine nine other in the like quarrell: Wherefore the day after Palmerins victory, he put himselfe in order as the time requyred, and hauing in the Fields erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displacing them that belonged to the

the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set vp all of Crimson Velure, very curiously embrodered with Gold and pearle, and round about within, were Inscriptions of many braue sentences of Loue, extracted from Hystoriographers and Poets, as well in Greeke, as in Latine, in praise of the Mistresse of his deuoted affections. In the morning hee went to giue the good morrowe to the Princesse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, whome hee had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemne courtesies passed betweene them, fearing the Queene should finde them together, he take his leaue of her, shee giuing him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with fiue great Dyamondes, and fiue faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the Field, the Iudges appointed were the eldest Sonne of Fraunce, and the Counte of Armignac: wise Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the gate of his Tent vnarmed, because hee saw none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorrayne at length entered the Fielde, attended on by a braue company of Knights & Squyres, who brought the portraite of his Lady, being a figure of rare Beautie, and hauing a Crowne on her head, where ouer was written in great Letters of Golde, This is Polinarda, exceeding in Beautie all Ladyes in the worlde: Which was read by manie, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so braue a spectacle, and beeing sette on the Pillar appoynted, hee came to the Duke of Sauoye, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractour of the Beautie of Ladyes, héere may thine owne eyes witnesse how thou hast belyed Beautie, in presuming to thinke any more fayre then this incomparable creature, to whome thy Ladye may not worthily be hand-mayde. And if thou wilt not presently conselle what I commaund thée, sheelde thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knocke well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Sauoye enraged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answere, and mounting on Horsebacke, with a strong Launce in his hande, encountred

countred his Enemie so courageously, as breaking both their Staues bravely in shiuers, to their very Gauntlets, palled on without any further harme. The Duke of Sauoye angry that he had not dismounted his enemie, with his Sword drawne returned furiously vpon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a good and hardie Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Sauoye manie shrewde Wounds, so that both of them (beeing throughly netled) rent each others Armor in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so vnmercifully, as the Iudges could not imagine who hadde the better vantage. The Duke of Sauoye wondering to see the Duke of Lorrayne holde out so long, beganne to storme more like a Fiend then a man, raylyng on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) she assisted him no better, and being at the very point of dispaire, toke heart afresh, and redoubling his stroakes vppon his aduersarie, at length slew his Horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so sore wearied, and bruised, besides, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recouer himselfe, before the Duke of Sauoy (being alighted) set fote vpon him, and in furie would haue parted his head from off his shoulders, but onely that the Iudges ranne quickely and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Sauoye caused Polinardaes picture to be sette at Lucemanias fête: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards hee was vnarmed, to haue his Wounds bound vp, which were so daungerous, as gladly hee would haue beene excused from the Combate with any other Knight for that daye, did not shame, and the Lawe he had made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desyed by a Knight of Scicilia, who would Combate on Foote, with the battel-Axe, in which conflicte the Duke was very nere ouercome, hee had lost so much bloud before: but yet in briefe, the

Scyci-

Sciellian Knight iost the day, his Ladies Picture was yelden conquered, and the Duke of Sauoye went to reskue him in his Tent.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

¶ How the Duke of Sauoye entered the Combate against Ptolome, and how hee sped.

PAlmerin not as yet in perfect health, was aduertised how the Duke of Sauoy had conquered the Duke of Lorrain, fighting for the beautie of the Princesse Polinarda, the conceite whereof so grieued him as nothing could more, to see her honour so badly defended whome aboue all other he estæmed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) Loue made a slender choyse of the Duke of Lorraine for his Vassall, and Madame Polinarda seemed to bee scant wise to chuse him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beautie Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not bee imagined, how the Duke of Lorrayne should gayne the victorie without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because hee is vnworthy such extraordinarie Fauour, which makes mee repute it rather of a fainte heart, then any want of a iust quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, saide. In good sooth Syr Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counselled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beautie without her Licence, in that hee once learned, how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing her hadde spoken

much

more then he might, because hee discoursed his Loue too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lorde) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whome dependeth my life, and whome I loue more deare then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to vnderstand, how madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, eyther of grace or beautie, all the Ladyes of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World: therefore one may easily coniecture, that the Duke of Lorrain during the Combat, had his minde fixed on baser occasions. Then Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his Loue, saide: It is no strange matter (Friende Palmerin,) to see presuming mindes payde with selfe same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot inough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, shee hauing had so good knowledge of your Valour and Prowesse. These speeches pleased Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as the iniurie done his Ladie, by the Duke of Sauoy, in setting her Figure at the feete of Lucemania, hadde not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sicke and sore as he was, he would haue gone to reuenge this dishonour. Notwithstanding, hee called Ptolome secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my deare Friende) what shame is offered her, to whom I was Destinated before my byrth, by the presumption of an ouer-bolde Knight, and what griefe it is to mee, that I cannot at this present reuenge this wrong my selfe, I pray thee therefore supplye my insufficiencie, and enter the Combat with that vaine-glorious Duke, of whome thou mayest gaine honour and yeeld me content, in giuing ease to my affections, which else are insupportable. I promise you (my Lorde, answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I had indeed it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no doubt to ouercome the Duke of Sauoye. And for my Mistresse Brionella, will I enter the Fielde, whose beautie is sufficient to enrich me with the Victorie, for surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucemania. Therefore my

Lorde

Lords let mee request one courtesie, which I am loathe y
should denye me: that if you shall be able to morrow, but
accompanie me with your presence in the Fielde. If the Ky
will suffer mee, (quoth Palmerin, I will, in meane while,
will pray, that thy Fortune may fall out to my hearts desi

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were passing t
time, conferring with other Noblemen, of the valour of t
Duke of Sauay, against all strange knights: and how he h
foyled the Duke of Lorrayne, had not his Horse falle on hi
and mained him: otherwise, he brought the Combate to
good a Judgement, as he had wonne the honour of the Fie
Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, bec
himselfe was not able to reuenge this misfortune: Ne
withall, hee conceyued a kinde of Iealousie of the Duke
Lorrayne, because hee hadde chosen his Ladie Polinarda
his Mistresse, and on her behalfe hee hadde entred the Co
bate: and how hee durst place her Picture on the Pillar w
her name, without hee had receyued some commaundem
from her: Which conceyt so grieued him, as his wounds
gan to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labour
in his thoughts; Now with the lightnes, then againe
the inconstancie of Women, neuertheles, he could not im
(affecting earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that shee wo
be of such a double liking: and in this doubtfull estate, sa
Ah God, I see that Women winne lightly, and lose ag
more easily. Then repenting his words, followes on th
O heauens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that
(meaning Polinarda) should be so forgetfull, and neuer
I beleue, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous, would
ward mee with such Treason, which may not, nay I
sweare cannot, once enter her thoughts. Yet would no
opinions serue to allaye this new iealousie, but still it h
power to confound reason: and all the night continued
this variable conceit, til the next morning, when Ptolom
soone as the Sunne arose) accompanyed with Trineus,
to his Tent, where being Armed, all sauing his Hel
h

haning his Launce and Shelde, hee came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest knight the cause of my comming, stand vpon thy guarde, for I fight for beautie. The Duke suddainly at these words mounted on horsebake, and ranne against his enemie with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his saddle, and sudainlye alighted with his Swoorde drawne: but the Duke recouering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then hee expected. Now beganne betweene them a cruell and pittious Combat, as their Armour, shéldes and swoordes, flew about in péces, and the blod trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their liues. Yet in the ende, the Duke beeing of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and grédy of victory ouer his enemie, ran so violently vpon him as hee got him on the grounde, and he being vppermost, offered to take the aduantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little, sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise sore wounded was carryed into his Pauillion, but first hee saw the protrait of Brionella sette in the rancke of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a knight of Scotland at the Mace, who not nimble enough in vsing that weapon, in the end had the foyle, and three other knights afterward at seuerall weapons, so that it was admirable to beholde the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat gainst the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of auoy was accounted the onely knight in the world, to the ouinall ioy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded erselfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But shee as not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensiue, and enraged ut of measure: not withstanding his weakenes, and the ofen intreaties of Trineus, he would nedes to the fielde, saying,

ing. God my Lord perswade mee not, for I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeaunce of the dishonour doone to my Ladie your Mistresse: the manifold courtesies of the Emperour your Father, haue so bounde me to her and you, as excéede my life farre, and therefore I beseech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet ouercame him by perswasions, assuring him to haue time sufficient for his reuenge, whereat greatlie displeased, hee feigned himselfe to be whole sooner then hee was indeéde, for the great desire hee had to deale with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angrie, to see the Duke hold the fielde longer then hee did, not able to bee ouercome by any Knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I know not my Lord, whether you vnderstande the Duke of Sauoyes victories against so many hardie Knights, but belike his strength is much better then mine was, or Fortune allowes him more fauour then shee did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not the Combat, you doo me wrong and your selfe too: and if he depart hence with victory, then shall I haue cause to complaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so brave and presumptuous, as though no Knight is able to answere him in the fielde: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well hee deserues) make him know his folly. Palmerin hauing greater desire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answere. My Lord, God giues honour and victory to whom hée pleaseth, without eyther regarde of the cause or the persons. If according to bountie or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you béene among the better sorte, as furnished sufficiently with valour and magnanimitie: yet if your enterprise haue not sorted to your desire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good, and for other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and hee doth ballance them by his diuine wisedome. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfie your request, as ease mine owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate would haue me stay a while: there

will I Combate with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with mée. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquere, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yéelde you content, and mee the victory: so shall your sadnes and mine be conuerted into pleasure. With this aunswere the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was hee ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then hee imagined: but pleased as hee was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many Knights were conferring of déedes of Armes past, to whom hee opened the fantasie of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for vanquished, except Palmerins weakenes were his greater Friend.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Sauoye, and the issue thereof.

SIr daies together had the Duke of Sauoy maintained this quarrell, for the beautie of his Ladie Lucemania, & no knight as yet could get any aduantage of him, vntill the seauenth day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the fielde, and entred his tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, sauing his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his Sheild and Mace, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his Ladie Polinarda, which being sette on the Pillar, hee

claſped on his Helmet, and taking his Mace in his hande, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus ſummoned him. Knight, thou haſt long enough defended the field, and to my great greefe that it hath beene ſo long, my turne is now come, and it is good reaſon I ſhould keepe it the reſt of the time: for the Ladie whom I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beſide, excelleth all other whatſoeuer, and if thou wilt not confeſſe the ſame, I will not leaue thee with this Mace till I haue forced thee to doo it. I knowe not ſaide the Duke, what thou canſt doo, but I am of the minde, that I ſhall ſome quallifie thy ouerbolde brauing. At theſe woords the Duke taking his Mace, deliuered Palmerin ſo ſounde a ſtroke on the heade, as made him to ſtagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and bruiſed each other very pittifully. till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke ſuch a cruell ſtroke betweene the head and the ſhoulders, as hee fell to the grounde cleane bereft of ſence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but ſetting his ſworde againſt his breſt, ſaid. Now am I ſufficiently reuenged on him, that ſo ill intreated the figure of the moſt fayreſt among Ladies. The Judges of the fielde, thinking Palmerin would haue ſlaine the Duke, came running to him with theſe woords. Content you Syr, hee is vanquiſhed, and hath no power to defend himſelfe. Whereupon Palmerin put vppe his Sword againe, and leauing the Duke, went preſently to the Piller where his Ladies portrait ſtood, which embracing in his armes, hee placed higheſt, and Lucemania at her feete, ſaying. I beſeech you Madame to pardon your Knight, in that hee did no ſooner repell the ſaucus iniurie offered you, and impute it not to feare or want of courage, but debillity of body, which once a little recouered, I came to maintaine your honour, and heere confirme you for the moſt beautifull Lady liuing. While Palmerin thus contemplated his Miſtreſſe figure, the Judges commaunded the Duke to bee carried into his Pauilion,

where

where, with soueraigne drinks life was got into him again, but when hee knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre hee lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of greefe had well-neere slaine him. No lesse was the sorrow of Madame Lucemania, but shee and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trineus, and Ptolome were ioyfull: but aboue all other, Prince Lewes of Fraunce, more pleasant then if himselfe had tryumphed in victory, thinking hee could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him ẏ onely puller downe of the proude. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, sauing their liues, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many braue exployts, beeing readie to leaue ẏ fielde because none came to resist him, on a suddain there entred a Knight in blacke Armour, striped all ouer with Golde, and bearing in his sheelde of Azure the Golden Sunne whose braue order of entraunce declared him to be a hardie Knight at Armes, who aduauncing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of comming hither (Sir knight) is to let thee vnderstand, that I am the Seruaunt and beloued of a Ladie, who may not bee equalled with any other, and because I am enformed, ẏ thou maintainest thy Freend, to excell all Ladies whatsoeuer, I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I neuer spake wordes more true, aunswered Palmerin, and heere abide to iustifie them: but this place is ordeyned to no other ende, then to make thee and thy like know, what vnaduised enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before thou begin the Combate, thou sette vppon this Piller the counterfeite of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Ladie in beautie, according to the conditions of this field published through all Europe. That cannot I doo, aunswered the Knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath

so liuely figured her person, as she is dayly presented to mee by her incomparable beautie, which cannot bee taken from me but onely by death. And if loue follow the soule, (as diuers hold opinion) whole worldes cannot separate me from her. And therefore are all men vnworthy to receiue fruition (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me imagine, none but my selfe worthy to looke on her diuine figure. Prepare thee therefore to thy Horse, and defende thy selfe. Palmerin desirous to know the name of this fayre Ladie, said. I see sir knight, that thou art meruailous proud and surlie, which make mee rather desire to Combat with thee then any other to abate this hotte humour: albeit this is contraire to his conditions, who was the principall Authour of this enterprise: which is, that thou shouldest set on this Pillar her portrait whom thou so estemest: yet this exception shall bee graunted thee, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst doo, as also her name, if thou darest reueale it. To tell thee her name (answered the knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her setle downe the onely worke of beautie: know therefore that her name is Polinarda, Daughter to the mightie Emperor of Allemagine. These wordes were so yrkesome to Palmerin, and troubled his thoughts in such sort, that hee knew not readilye what to aunswere: notwithstanding in midst of his choller, thus spake. By God knight, thou hast made a good choyse, for against her beautie will not I contende, hauing it in greater estimation and reuerence the thē thou canst haue: but I am readie to proue, that thou deseruest not to be named her Knight, no not so much as her meanest Seruaunt. That shall we try, said the knight of the Sunne, before wee part: and albeit her excellencie deserue farre greater seruice then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreeable seruice, I may by good reason name my selfe hers. At these speeches Palmerin conceiued such iealousie, as without attending

tending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horſebacke, and met the Knight of the Sunne ſo forcible, as both of them were ſent to the grounde: whereuppon they drew their Swordes, and charged each other with ſuch furie, as their Armour and Shields were hacked in peeces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No permiſſion of breathing was ſuffered betweene them, but blood and death earneſtly deſired on either part, ſo that the King, the Lordes and the Iudges, reputed this for the ſtrangeſt Combat that euer they ſaw, nor could they ſay who was likeſt to win the fielde, but if the one died, the other could not eſcape, ſo that the King moued with compaſſion, cauſed them to be ſeuered, and commaunded them to enter their Tents. Which motion liked well the Knight of the Sunne, for long he perſwaded himſelfe he could not hold out, wherfore he mounted on horſebacke ſo well as he could and withdrew himſelfe, Palmerin being wonderfully diſpleaſed, that hee could not obtaine the victorye of this knight. Soone after, the King and the Prince Lewes came into his Tent, and ſeeing him very ſore wounded, would not let him ſtay there, but ſaid, Beleeue me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great neede of reſt, and your wounds I ſee are very dangerous, you ſhall therefore be conueyed to my Pallace, where all helpes that may be deuiſed ſhall be giuen, aſſuring you, that greater honour could neuer knight purchaſe, then you haue done. And though this laſt Combate were not ended, you neede not be diſpleaſed, the iſſue thereof importeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue ſeene, for two of the beſt Prouinces in my Realme. And mee thinks you ſhould content your ſelfe, hauing receyued before ſuch honour ouer ſo many Lordes and Knights of fame: come you therefore with mee, and Lord Trineus beare vs companie. Great thanks receiued the King of them for his honourable courteſie, and Palmerin went with him to the Pallace, where the Kings Chyrurgions toke care for his Wounds, hee being lodged in the moſt ſtately Chamber

in the Court. Now the Prince Lewes beganne to loue Palmerin so dearely, as hee could not bee an houre forth of his cõpanie, desiring his health as his owne welfare: wherefore all things that hee imagined Palmerin take pleasure in, would hee perfourme with his vttermost endeuours, and would suffer none to hold him talke, but onely of matter that might yeld pleasure and delight. Notwithstanding, diuers Knights conferring with him that euening, as concerning the Knight of the Sunne: Palmerin answered them, that his minde should neuer be thoroughly quieted, vntill, such time as he fought with him againe. The Prince, who still endeuoured to keepe him from sadnes, said, I beleeue (my lord) that hee will not easily be induced to deale with him againe, for you brought him into such estate, as hee will keepe himselfe hereafter out of your handes: and well I am assured, that had you continued but a little longer, the victorye had beene yours, for the Knight was so weakened, that hee did nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaseth you (my Lord) to say so quoth Palmerin, but had hee felt such valour in me, or such courage as beseemes a vertuous Combatant, hardlye coulde hee escape as hee hath done: neuertheless, I hope (with the fauour of Fortune) to meete him once more, and then we will trie who is the strongest. Much other talke they had, but Palmerin intreated the Prince, that all the portraits of the conquered Ladies might bee brought him, which were aboue an hundred, of diuers beauties and most strange fashions, and among them all could be found none second to Polinarda, but (as we haue said alreadie) that of Agriola the Princesse of England: who (by the report of a Gentleman present that hadde seene her) was much more beautifully then her figure presented. Such speeches they continued so long of the English Virgin, as Trineus, (albeit hee neuer saw her) became amorous of her, and at ỹ instant hee so solemnly vowed himselfe hers, as thence forward hee swore neuer to loue any but her, so that for her sake he threw himselfe into manie perillous fortunes, as in the folle wing

discourse

ſcourſe of the Hiſtory you ſhall reade more at large. From
home let vs returne to the Prince Lewes, who ſeeing ſo
many protraitures of Princeſſes and Ladies, would daily
ongratulate Palmerins good fortune, and embracing him,
id. So helpe me God, my noble companion, I would ne-
er deſire greater riches in the world, then to reſemble you,
pecially in chiualrie, which in you is ſo ſurpaſſing all other,
you haue ended to your honor, what a number haue fay-
in. Oh how happy may the Lady account her ſelfe, that
th ſuch a knight: and were not the condition too cruell
wards my ſelfe, I could wiſh I were a Woman in her
ace, to haue ſo high rule and commaunde ouer you. At
hich words all preſent beganne to ſmile, yet ſhewing good
untenance to Palmerin, for the affection they ſaw the
ince bare him, which is yet to this day a comon vſage
d practiſe among Courtiers: but Palmerin ſomewhat a-
amed of ſuch ſuperſtitious prayſes, anſwered. Truſt mee
y Lord, I account my happineſſe the greater that I haue
neſeruice to ſo high a perſonage and ſo good a knight as
u are, deſiring to meete you in ſuch place hereafter where
u may perceiue the good will I beare you, not onely for
s high entertainment, which is more then I can deſerue,
for the pleaſure I haue to honor ſo good a Prince, which if
occaſion happen, you ſhall perceiue the experience. I
ue ſpoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is more
quainted to others then my ſelfe, and if I would conceale
m, then will they bee moſt openly knowne, becauſe ver-
doth ſo apparantly ſhine in them. Many other ſpeaches
ſed betweene them, and longer had continued, but that
my Lords which came to ſee the Iouſts, were now vp-
departing, and therefore would take their leaue of the
ng, whereupon they were conſtrained to breake off, the
ince going to his Chamber of preſence, where hee gaue
nkes to a number that honoured the Court with their
ſence, and ſo one after another all departed, the Duke
auoye being one of the firſt, aſhamed (God knowes) to

be

be so conquered by Palmerin, and not abiding his Lady L
cemania farewell. But Lewes did not serue the Duches
so, for her loue continued as resolute as before, and she
ued him as well conquered, as had hee béene the conqueror
whereof shée assured him by many amorous méetings,
which meanes the Prince stayed the Duke at the C
longer then himselfe would haue done. Lewes thus lou
Palmerin as you haue heard, intreated the Duchesse
come and visit him, which shée accomplished the day follo
ing, when Palmerin spent many discourses with her, rat
of loue then entring into religion, for hée perceiued by
countenance that shée had no will to become a Nun, whe
wee will leaue them together, and tell you who the kni
of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combate with P
merin.

CHAP. XL.

Who the knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange
uentures.

THe King of Hungaria, Father to
Prince Tarisius, that married the
Griana, Mother to Palmerin, had in
latter yéeres a Sonne named Netrid
and after hée had long liued in rest
prosperity, hée dyed, leauing the
prince Netrides, fifteene yeeres olde,
in the custody of his elder brother T
sius. This Netrides growing in good constitution of b
and behauiour, béeing well beloued generally, so gracio
gentle, and well gouerned hée was, as the Lords, knigh
C

Gentlemen, and people of Hungaria, eſtéemed him moze then
heyz King Tariſius, who beeing Crowned after his Fathers
creaſe, loued Netrides as Brother-hood requyzed, till Foz-
une (enuious of this Concozd) not willing that the vertues
this young Pzince ſhould be there ertinguiſhed, chaunged
s Loue and affection into erceeding hatred, by an occaſion
reafter following. One day the King Tariſius walking
his Garden to take the ayze, left his Brother Netrides in
e Chaybez, accompanyed with the Quéene, who without
agination of any harme, noz that his fatall ſtarres would
t him any miſfoztune, ſatte downe in the Kings Chayze,
heetalked with the Quéene, and continued there ſo long,
Tariſius came vppe and found him there ſitting, which he
ke in ſuch ill parte, as in a great rage he thus beganne.
Who made thée ſo audacious and pzeſumptuous to ſitte in
Seate, againſt thy dutie and my liking: By mine honoz
u haſt done moze then thou wérneſt: and if I ſée the like
aine, oz may I but heare thereof, thy Head ſhall pay the
ce of thy follie. Netrides, who of his owne Nature was
nble and gentle, fell downe on his knée, intreating the
ng his Brother to pardon him; foz what he had done was
with any intent oz meaning to diſpleaſe his Highneſſe:
an ouer-ſight, and that ſo he would permit it to paſſe.
e King made him no anſwere, becauſe hee tooke Netrides
ſons foz no payment, but conceiued a ſecrete hatred in his
nds by this occaſion of ſo ſlender moment, which increaſed
nceforward, as the matter pzouoking a fiery Metéoze: ſo
t he did repine at his Brother ſo much, as hee would not
e ſpeake to him, noz affoꝛd him a good countenaunce.
Then called hée to remembzance the loue of his people to-
ds his Brother: And if this hatred ſhould come to theyz
wledge foz ſo ſmall a cauſe, hee imagined they would diſ-
e him, and make Netrides King. Foz which cauſe hée in-
ed to haue him ſlaine, and the execution hereof he cõmit-
o one of his Archers, but God (who is euermoze the pze-
er of the innocent) would not ſuffer ſuch a damned déede

of

of Paradice to take effect. Which Tarisius percey uing finding one day his Brother alone, enflamed with this contented humour, saide: Netrides, thou hast offended more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore ban thée my Courte and kingdome: and loke that within t dayes thou get thée hence, and on thy life not to discouer any man, or take any one with thée to beare thée compa

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made ans that hée would accomplish his charge, and so withdrewe selfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his ca heauinesse. Then willing one of his Squyres to saddle Steede, departed away as close as hée could, forbidding a his Seruants to follow him: and such expedition hee m as not resting but one night in any Lodging, he left his thers kingdome, wandering without any care of himself which way hee went, but went héere and there, as For pleased to guide him. Hauing long time Trauelled in lemaigne, his Money fayled him, in that at his departu was but badly prouided: yet could not his Princely m abase it selfe to Beg, so that being without meate or d or any place to rest himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he s the meanes to shrowde him where none might discry and so entring a great Forrest, very thick and set with T shrubs, and bushes, hée estéemed that a conuenient plac him to rest in, wherefore alighting from his Horse, and ning him to féede, layde himselfe downe at the roote of a and thus beganne to breath forth his complaints. Ah stant Fortune, and to mée most of all inconstant: didst erect mée so high, and reiect me now thus low? well then I say, that more wrong thou dooest a man in one houre, right in all his life time: For if heretofore thou diddest mee pleasure and delight, that now thou makest mee p it: (and that with Vsurie to rigorous) not leauing any to comfort mée. Ah tyrannous King, cruell, and unna Brother, thou hast with shame banished mee, and b mee into this poore estate wherein I must dye: Oh ha

I might, rather then to liue in the vile estate of Beggarie.
So saying, hee layd him downe among the Hearbs, and was
mprised with such extreame feebleneſſe, as he fell into his la-
mentations againe, thus. Ah my Lord and Father, to soone
addest thou leaue mee, would God I then had borne thee
ompanie, or elſe that at this instant I might come to thee.
h men of Hungaria, I am well assured (knowing the loue
ou euer bare mee) that you will pittie when you heare my
fflictions and calamities: alas, I neuer deserued this vn-
ppy ende. And beeing vnable to continue longer speeche,
e there determined to finiſh his life. But better Fortune
fell him then hee expected, by the meanes of an Auncient
night named Lombardo, who being neere, heard all his do-
ous complaints. This Knight being rich and of Noble
od, had neere that Forrest a strong, delightfull, and sumptu-
s Caſtle, and delighted to walke among the Woods for his
reation, as good happe it was for Netrides, that hee wal-
d this Euening. He hearing these sadde and sorrowfull re-
ets, pittie so touched his heart, as the teares bedewed his
ekes: yet would hee not trouble him, while he continued
s moanes, but afterwards came and toke him by the hand,
ing: Arise my Friende and take courage, for you are in
place where you shal finde more good to benefite you, then
me to offende you, where fore cherish vp your spirites, and
get this your heauineſſe, which may endanger you beyond
euerie. Netrides seeing this Honourable Gentle-man,
th his beard so white as snowe, hearing his courteous of-
and for him now so necessary, with ioye, feare, and bash-
neſſe, all coupled togither, accepted it, and humbly thanked
m, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to mee, then
uerable and despised life. The Knight comforting him,
ſwered him thus, that it was not in his power to chose
r death, but the Founder of the Heauens reserued that
horitie in his owne handes. With these words hee toke
m by the hand, and conducted him to his Caſtle, where hee
s worthilye entertained by the Knight himselfe, his La-
die

die and her Daughter, one of the fayrest Virgines in all
Countrey. Lombardo hauing heard all his misfortunes
harde Aduentures, in the Night discoursed all the whole
Ladie: wherefore (good Wife, quoth hee) entertaine him
well as may bee, for I assure you hee is descended of high
gree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent
his Byrth, wee will giue him our Daughter in Marriage,
so himselfe accept our Offer. The good Ladie misliked
her Husbandes opinion, wherefore the next Morning
went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your
ming hether hath wel contented my Lord and Husba
so please it you to stay heere, we will be very glad and
your good companie, which gentle offer Netrides accep
thanking God and the Ladie for his happie fortune.
remained hee with this ancient Knight Lombardo, wh
terwards neuer remembred him of his miseries in the
reft, but intreated him so well, as though hee had bene
owne Sonne. Netrides seeing the Knightes Daughte
faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only
vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-feat
Bodie, they beganne amorously to affect each other secr
but Loue inuented the meane to reueale it openly: for L
bardo well noting the great discretion of this young Ge
man, and knowing him to be descended of bloud-Royall
solued to cause him Marrie his Daughter, demaunding
question of Netrides, among many other speeches, if so h
ked to marry his Daughter. My deere Lord (quoth he)
the summe of my desire, and greater honor cannot yon be
on me, so please her to conceyue the same opinion I do.
marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the
sence of many Gentles, neighbours thereabout, who ma
led the Knight bestowed his Daughter so, in that they
med Netrides but a poore Knight errant. It fortuned
ward that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, le
they Daughter great with Childe, to the no little co
of Netrides, that after all his sorrowes he would bee

Fa

father. Three dayes before this Ladie fell in Trauell, shee dreamed that shee was shut vppe in a very darke Chamber, whereout she could by no meanes get, and therefore called for ayde to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was shee aduised to take her Childe in her armes, and to stay there still, whereon she beheld her Infant, and saw that his Face somwhat resembled the beames of the Sunne, the brightnesse whereof chased away the Darknesse, so that shee might beholde the place as cleere as any other, saying: My Lord, forgette this sadnesse, and you shall reioyce by this Infant, for this is he that will reestablish you in the place you haue lost, and shall seate you in the Chayre with Honour, for which you were exyled hence, giuing you his Crowne, that Traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. Hee comforted with these words, tooke the Childe in his armes, and saide. Little soule, I pray God thy Mother speake truth, and that thou mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espyed a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his entreaties and supplications carryed it away with him.

This sorrowe for Netrides made her giue a loude shreeke, whereat hee calling his Wife, demaunded the cause of this her sodaine affright: whereupon shee rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and reioycing thereat, saide: I hope my Lorde that it will so happen to you as I haue dreamed, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: notwithstanding hee remained in many doubtfull varieties of opinion, till they vnderstood by effects the pretended certaintie of this Dreame. Now was come the time of the Ladies deliuerance, which was a goodly Man-childe, so fayre and well fauoured as one should lightly behold, being named Fisol and shee would suffer none to Nurse it but her owne selfe, for the certaine hope shee reposed in him. The Childe growing in time to such comely stature, as eache one tooke great pleasure in beholding him, whereat the Mother was glad, that albeit shee had afterwards two other Sonnes, shewed shee no such speciall loue towardes them as vnto

Fryfol,

Fryſol, which procured ſome hatred betweene his bre
and him. This young Lord growing to fourteene yeres
Age, was in ſtature very tall, delighting himſelfe in ry
great Horſes, ſhoting in the Long-Bow, caſting the Bar
and diuers other Gentleman-like exerciſes, as alſo to ch
in the Foreſt, where olde Lombardo met with his Fa
So that on a day after long and weary Chaſing of the
hauing ſweated very ſore, and growne marueilous dry
want of drinke, finding a little Spring by the foote of a
hee lay downe and dranke, but afterwards hee became
and ſickly, as hee trembled, ſhiuering very ſore: So that
of his Squyres could hardly leade him againe to the Ca
Netrides ſeeing him ſo exceeding ill, was marueilous ſor
commaunding his Phyſitions to ſeeke ſome preſent helpe
him, who plyed him with ſuch wholſome potions, as his f
uer left him, but his Face and all his Bodie were ſo paint
as he had bene a Leaper, which made him to be mocked of
other Brethren, and ſcorned of all the Seruants, except
ly of his Father and Mother, which was ſuch a griefe to hi
as hee would haue dyed with fretting at them, but his Fa
rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner.

I did hope (my Sonne) by thy meanes to be reſtored a
to the Kingdome of my deceaſed Father: but now, how
it will be before, God knowes, if this ſtrange malady of
be neuer holpen. Fryſol amazed at his Fathers words,
ſired him earneſtly to report the whole circumſtance: w
Netrides at length did, rehearſing how hee was Broth
the King of Hungaria, the harde entreatance hee had w
wards him, and laſtly, hee tolde him the Dreame of his
ther. Fryſol ſtudying a long ſpace on his Fathers wo
at length anſwered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of
Soueraigne power of the Highеſt, who by his diuine
ment hath ſent mee this diſeaſe, that thus tormenteth
Euen ſo, when it pleaſeth him, he will take it from me a
and giue mee health and ſtrength much more then euer I
before, with meanes ſufficient to giue you ayde and ſu

according to the matter whereon you haue diuined. And albeit I fele so extreame anguish, as death may not be likened to it, yet doth this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing, but perswade your selfe there is comfort behinde. These words were so pleasing to Netrides, as mere ioy caused the teares to trickle downe his chekes, marualling at the wonderfull courage of his Son, enduring such terrible paines as hee did: wherefore what hee thought hee could not reueale, but withdrew himselfe into his Chamber.

CHAP. XLI.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethrē, determined to go seeke strange aduētures.

FRysol hauing heard the originall of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his mother, was thence forward more pensiue then hee had bene before, and perceiuing his brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, hee determined to forsake his fathers house, and to seeke aduentures, and remedie for his sickneſſe, if any were to bee founde. And being one day in the Forrest more melancholyke then accustomed, hee espied a knight vered with Leprosie come by the high way, mounted on a poore Palfray, to whome hee said. My Friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to beare thee company,

and I will bee ready to doo what thou shalt commaund mee. The knight perceiuing hee might gaine some benefite by Frysol, was well contented, and so bad him mount vppe behinde him. So washée glad to doe what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yéeres, trauailing many countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came hée deliuered his maister, reseruing nothing for himselfe but what hée gaue him, and bearing a mind so noble and vertuous, as hee desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villainous or dishonest act. So many countries and prouinces had they trauailed, as at last they came into the Realme of Hungarie, when Frysol remembred that he was in his Uncles Land, who ledde a life so base and ignominious: hée was ouercome with excéeding heauinesse, which ill agréed with his dangerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadnesse: but Frysol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was more agréeable to him, then a life so dolorous and miserable. At which words the knight growing in choller, thrust him beside his Horse, and rode away, leauing poore Frysol there, hauing no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length hée receiued succour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countreyman that dwelt on a mountaine néere at hand. This maiden leading her Fathers Beasts and Cattell to pasture, tooke great delight in gathering hearbs and roots, wherewith to make oyntments for all woundes and diseases: and this day (by the diuine permission) shée chaunced that way where shée heard the mournefull lamentations of Frysol, whome when she behelde, ouercome with pittie and compassion, said. Alas my Friend, how came you into this desart and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sicknesse. In good sooth mistresse (quoth hée) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to liue any longer in this monstrous languishing

Friend

Friend, answered the mayde, you ought not thus to dispayre in sickneſſe, but conſider that the Lord and gouernour of the heauens and earth, doth by theſe meanes trie and proone his people, whom if hee perceiue thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemies, he makes them his Frends and Children, onely by the ranſome of his beloued Sonne paide, If then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perſwaded you ſhall ſone finde remedy. So cauſing him to ryſe, ſhee conducted him to her Fathers houſe, where for certaine dayes ſhee bathed him with wholeſome Hearbes, and annointed him with ſuch precious oyntments, as in ſhort time his diſeaſe forſoke him, and hee was as cleane as at the time hee dranke the Water: for which hee humbly thanking the maiden, ſaid. God make me able (fayre Virgin) to repute this wonderfull kindneſſe receiued at your hands, accounting my ſelfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gaue me firſt life: and this perſwade your ſelfe, that whereſoeuer my body bee ſeparated from this place, my heart ſhall remaine ready to do you my ſeruice. That is my will & intent (quoth Leonarda, but thanke him chiefely that made mee able to helpe you, and in ſo dooing ſhall I account my labour well beſtowed. Fryſol for this vnexpected good fortune, was henceforward very dutifull and louing towards Leonardas Father and her Brethren, as the readieſt Seruant he had in his houſe: but the good man eſteemed ſo well of him, as by no meanes hee would ſuffer him to be ſo painfull, but with ſuch fare as God ſent him, entertained and welcomed him, not ſuffering him to depart thence in the ſpace of a yeere and more. Fryſol often accompanying Leonarda to the fielde, ſhee ſeeing him ſo fayre and comely in perſonage, began ſecretly to affect him, yet would ſhe not acquaint him therewith, fearing more to offend then to be refuſed. So ſoone as Fryſol had thus recouered his ſtrength, he determined to ſtay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leiſure conuenient, hee ſayd. I know very well (faire Mayden) how much I am

beholding to you, for the speciall grace and good I haue re-
ceiued by you, which induceth mee to make you this pro-
mise, that you shall not commaund any thing, but I will
gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to trauaile
after strange aduentures, I would request that it might
bee with your willing consent, promising you to stay no lon-
ger hence then the tearme of three yeares, in which time I
will not fayle to visite you againe: and if my fortune so fall
out as I am perswaded, I doubt not to recompence what
you did for me: That which I alway feared (sir Frysol) quoth
shee, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, seeing it is con-
uenient I should loue honour more then mine owne plea-
sure, I am content you shall goe seeke your aduauncement so
well begunne: but I pray you not to cast your promise in
oblivion. I will not to the death (quoth hee) do any thing
that may dislike you, or against your will, and since you haue
so freely graunted mee libertie, perswade your selfe my word
shall bee my deede. So taking his leaue of his Father and
Brethren, hee trauelled towards Allemaigne, where he
heard that Chiualrie was more maintayned then in any o-
ther place, and so Rode hee foure dayes together without any
Aduenture: till passing through a Forrest, he heard (as it
were) a great noyse of people fighting, wherefore making
haste that way, he espyed an ancient Knight assaulted by three
Villaines that sought to murther him, whome hee resisted as
well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his Sword to de-
fend him. The Knight espying Frysol, called to him for help,
when hee (suddenly finding a young Tree, pluckt vppe by the
rote, came therewith to the Villaines, thus saying: Why
Traiterous varlets, what prouoketh you to offer such shame
to a Knight? where with hee toke one of them so suddenly
on the pate with his Tree, as hee neuer rose, to tell who hurt
him. The Knight and he together, so behaued themselues,
as three of those Villaines were laid dead before them, while
the other three perceiuing, toke themselues to flight: where-
vpon the olde Knight seeing himselfe so well deliuered, came

and

and embraced Fryſol with theſe wordes. Now may I ſay my good friend, that my life had periſhed without your aſſiſtance, bethinke your ſelfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentleneſſe: in meane time, I haue a houſe not farre hence, let me intreate you to lodge with mee this night, and I will make you the beſt entertainment the Country will afford. Whereto Fryſol agreed, promiſing to leaue him in ſafetie before hee departed: for which the old knight thanked him, and as they went hee diſcourſed to him, how theſe villaines aſſailed him, becauſe hee had enforced them to ſurrender certaine heritages, which vniuſtly they detained from poore Orphanes, and for that cauſe ſet ſpies to watch him, that they might ſet vpon him and kill him: which ſurely they had done (quoth hee) without your ſuccour. In the continuance of theſe ſpeeches, they arriued at his Caſtle, where many of his Squires marualled to ſee him ſo ſore wounded, but ſpecially his Lady and his two Sonnes, to whome hee rehearſed the ſumme of his aduentures, and the great fauour and helpe hee found by Fryſol, for which cauſe hee entertained him with exceeding honour. And ſo long abode Fryſol there with the Knight, till beeing deſirous to receiue the order of knighthood, hee came to the knight in this manner. My it pleaſe you Sir to beſtow on me horſe and armour, I will go to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, hee beeing the moſt renowned Prince in the world. The good knight ſeeing him ſo forward to chiualrie, gaue him horſe, armour, and money for his iourney, whereupon hee ſet forward, and the third day after hee arriued at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards Fraunce: which newes made Fryſol earneſtly deſire his knighthood, becauſe hee intended with all ſpeede to trauaile thither likewiſe, in reſpect of the honour was there to be won. Fryſol vnderſtanding the Emperour was in the Chappell hearing diuine ſeruice, went thither, where beholding the Princeſſe Polinarda, hee reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world,

thinking hée could neuer glut his eyes with regarding her: whereon, seruice being ended, he fell on his knée before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowing (inuincible Lord) that you are renowned beyonde all other Potentates whatsoeuer, and that you make no small account of Knights aduenturous: I desire that by your hand I may be numbred among them. The Emperour séeing him to yong and yet valiantly giuen, answered. I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. My Lord (quoth he) I sweare by the faith I owe to God and your Maiestie, that I am noble borne, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side. God forbid then (sayd the Emperour) but you should bee knight, and Fortune shéld you so well in chiualrie, as shée haue indued you with comely shape and beautie. Then was the Spurre put vppon his right héele, and the Emperour bad him rise a Knight, commaunding his Daughter Polinarda to guyrd his Sword to him, which shée did, saying. Worthily and with happinesse (Sir knight) may you imploy the order you haue receiued. Madam (quoth Fryfol) if hereafter any vertue or valour abyde in me, it shall be imployed onely for you, hauing thus honoured mée with my Sword, wherewith I hope to accomplish such déedes of armes, as shall renowne her name that gaue mée my weapon: but Polinarda made him no answere, because Polimerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Fryfol was thus knighted, taking his leaue of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small hast till hée arriued at the Iousts of Paris, where hee determined for his first déed of chiualrie, to enter the Combate for the beauty of Polinarda. But hée could not get thether so soone as he intended, for hée was hindred by the way with an vnexpected aduenture, which was, in a fayre forrest, where hée beheld foure Knight carry away a Lady perforce, who crying him, cryed: Ah good Knight, for Gods sake succour me. Whereuppon Fryfol couching his Launce, sent one of the

Knight

knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now hee had but two left to resist him, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well hee could imploy the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other fellowes, the one hauing broken his necke in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recouery, toke the wisest way for themselues, posting thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might haue intrapped him, wherefore hee conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where hee remained that night, and the nert day sette forward to Paris, where hee arriued at the time hee fought with Palmerin, according as it hath beene before rehearsed.

After the knight of the Sunne, (who henceforth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as hee knew not which way hee rode, so that the moysture of the euening dew did great harme to his woundes, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, hee was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to go ayde the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was Nephew to the Emperour of Allemaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke being benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a fayre fielde, through which it fortuned Frysol to passe, complayning of the danger hee felt himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being alroade forth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noyse, which made him sende his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whether when they had brought him, the Duke pitying his estate, demaunded whence hee came, and who had wounded him in that sort. Then discoursed hee the whole matter, how he had fought with the knight that ouercame the Duke of Sauoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night

and the king causeth them to be parted, neyther of them as yet conquered, and because hee would not returne into the Citie, sought some Village where hee might conueniently lodge. The Duke of Gaule hearing the wordes of Fryſol, esteemed him for a worthy and valiant knight, hauing ſo long endurred against Palmerin vnuanquiſhed, wherefore hee ſayd. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and succour I can giue you, you ſhall be ſure to finde with hearty good will: aſſuring you, that there is no knight liuing to whome I wiſh more euill, then him whom you haue this day fought withall. So causing him to bee vnarmed, willed him to reſt himſelfe vppon his owne bedde, and made his wounds be dreſſed, abyding there eight daies for the health of Fryſol. In which time, the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more haſt to be gone, or elſe he would haue kept him companie longer. My Lord (quoth Fryſol) ſo pleaſe you to accept my companie, I hope to behaue my ſelfe ſo well, as you ſhall not be diſcontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and reioyced that by this meanes ſo good a knight was preſerued, and did him all the honour hee could deuiſe, taking him with him into England, where hee found the Country very much deſolated with warre to his no little greefe: but leaue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

¶ Of the great courtesie the King of Fraunce vsed to Trineus and to Palmerin : And of theyr returne into Allemaigne.

SO diligently were Palmerins Wounds attended, which hee had receyued by the hand of Frysol, as not long after he recouered his health, whereof the King and the Prince Lewes were highly glad, and much more Trineus, vnto whom the king desired to giue his Daughter Lucemania in Marriage: which to compasse, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto hee would inuite these twaine: yet first he would acquainte the Quéene therewith, and therefore beganne the matter with her thus.

I see Madame, that our Daughter Lucemania is of yéeres sufficient for a Husband, and because I euermore desired her highest preferment, and for that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wish she were espoused, were any thing in Loue that way affected, for hardly in my Iudgement shall we find a greater Lord, being heyre to the famous Emperour of Allemaigne: for this intent (I say) will I ordaine a Banquet, whereto both hée and Noble Palmerin shalbe inuited, and our Daughter to beare them companie in the best arte you can deuise. The Quéene, who more desired this Marriage then the King her Husband, aunswered. You doubt not (my Lorde) that I request her chiefest aduantage, therefore let it bee, as you haue determined, and shee shall be present as you haue appoynted. This matter thus proceeding

céeding, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knightes and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the stately Pallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Quéene, so leaded vppe into the Chamber appointed for theyr Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by and Palmerin against him, aboue whom sate faire Lucemania his Daughter, heeing placed iust opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Quéene to furnish the Table, sat downe by the King. And albeeit Nature had bestowed on the Princesse most exquisite Beautie, yet her sumptuous Accoustrement made her appeare most amyable: but all could not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her, to whose Shrine he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawne Trineus daunced with the fayre young Princesse, Courting her with many honest and decent spéeches, which made Lucemania suppose hée loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English Agriola.

In this time the other Ladyes were conferring of Palmerins Knightly valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orleaunces Daughter to daunce, was thus stayed by her spéeches to the other Ladies.

You sée faire Ladies (quoth shée) that Palmerin hath reprized our Beauties, to reuenge our Iniurie, let vs fall vpon him, and shutte him in some place, where he may neuer come forth: For if hée escape vs, the Allemaigne Ladyes shall beare the honour from the French, which will bée to vs perpetuall disgrace. These wordes shee vttered with such pleasaunt countenaunce, as moued all the other Ladyes to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundie answered. Sooth it is necessarie wee should do so, and let vs not suffer him to gette out of our handes so easilie, as hee did from the Knights that came to the Combate. All the companie liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladyes, I will not consent that Palmerin shall haue any wrong, because I have

aken him into my Guard. And who shall make recompence quoth an other Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ught to suffer for satisfaction (said the King) and be glad that ou had the meane to see the best Knight in the Worlde, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth our Maiestie to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaineth o doe you seruice: accounting my selfe more then happy, by omming to your Highnesse Courte, to haue knowledge of a rince so Noble, and vertuous, and no man liuing (next my ere Lord the Emperour) that my commandmẽt more then our Highnesse. Among other speeches, the King brake the matter of his Daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised, but all in aine: for after they had taken their leaue to return towards llemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in espect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princesse, as for e support he might haue by matching with the Daughter of rance, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord, e the good you wish me, as also the honour the King affords ẽ: but another beyond her (whose renowne hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistrisse of my affections. And because ou are hee from whom I will not hyde or conceale my most ecret thoughts, knowe that it is Agriola, Daughter to the ing of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, et by your ayde, and mine owne good endeuours, I doe not oubt to compasse my Loue. You know my Lorde (quoth almerin) that I wish as well to you, as mine owne heart, nd when occasion serues, tryall shall make manifest. And eing you haue fired your Loue on faire Agriola of England, imparting likewise the same so confidently to mee: I am perwaded you could neuer make a better choyse, therfore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundry speeches, not a little gladde they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin.

merin, much more then was Trineus, for the great desire he had to see his Lady Polinarda: wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to aduertise the Emperour of their comming: Before whom he had no sooner done reuerence, but hee was presently knowne, and demanded what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, when he had left them, and what accidents had hapned in France. Then the Squyre rehearsed the Combates and Victoryes of his Maister against the Knights of Fraunce, and the Dukes of Gaule and Sauoy, with their royall entertainment by the King and his Sonne, how many Portraites of Ladyes Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of euery action. Whereof the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the Lords and Ladyes were maruellous glad, yet was not their ioye comparable to the Princesse Polinardaes, hearing the Squyre reueale the honorable deedes of her Loue: so that no conceyte might bee discerned by her countenance, and needes must she thus demaund of the Squyre. I pray thee tell me my Friende, how fares my Lord and Brother, with his noble companyon Syr Palmerin? The Squyre well aduised because hee knewe the Loue betweene her and his Maister, sette his knee to the grounde againe, with this answere.

I left the Prince your Brother, accompanyed with my Lorde Palmerin, well and in good health: but chiefely my Lorde, who since you sawe him, hath wonne the greatest honour that euer Knight did. Afterward hee reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what griefe his Maister sustained in his sicknes, when hee could not be reuenged on the Knight that lost her Counterfeit, which the Duke of Sauoy displaced at the feete of Lucemania: and last of all, the perilous Combat betweene his Maister, and the Knight of the Sunne. Which she tooke such delight to heare, as she made him repeate one thing manie times, and could not satisfie her selfe sufficiently with these worthy reports. Which the Squyre perceyuing, delighted as much to iterate euery thing, and said: Beleeue mee Madame, the Loue my Maister beares to you

for whose beautie hee entred the Combat, in my opinion is incredible: For hee is more hers then his owne, and I haue seen him in such a pensiue sort thinking on her, as one could hardly iudge whether he were aliue or dead: fearing least any other should robbe him of his Loue: such is the iealousie of his vnspotted affection, albeit my Maister reputes his Ladie inuincible. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squyres words, answered. The Ladie should be very ill counselled, being honoured with the Loue of so good a Knight as Palmerin, to make refusall of his worthy seruice: and I promise thee, by the Faith of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the vnwillingnesse I haue to heare him so complaine, I would endeauour to cause her like none but him, and therein to thinke her selfe the most happie among Ladyes. Wherefore (if thou mayst be so bolde) tell thy Maister at his returne, that I will be a meane to ayde him towerds her hee Loues: and therewithall, present him my fauourable Salutations, in that I euermore desired the fortunate successe of his Enterprise: not so much for the liking of his Ladie, being beloued of the best, as for the renowned Chiualrie that harbours in his heart. These speeches ended, the Squyre returned to meete the Prince Trineus and his Maister, to whom he reported his talke with Polinarda: which Palmerin reioycing at, let fall all Iealousie, esteeming her now the truest Ladie liuing. The men of Gaunt, for ioy of his returne, that so worthily had deliuered them from the oppressions of the Enchaunted Knight, went forth in seuerall companyes, according as honour, yeeres, and office directed them, to meete him, and so conueied him with signes of ioy to the Pallace, where the Emperour so much abased himselfe, as hee came downe into the open Courte to entertaine him, and glad likewise, to see the safe return of his Sonne Trineus, saying: Thy Sonne, right happie is thy returne: and you Syr Palmerin, perswade your selfe so Welcom as heart can deuise: assuring you, that your successe hath not a litle pleased me. And needs must I account that Lady especially bounden vnto you, for whose

sake

loue you haue past so many daungerous Combates, good reason hath shée to Loue you, in respect of your Trauells for renowning her so much by your knightly Chiualry, so that make you not recompence according to your merites, wherthily may she be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth hee) her Beautie commaundeth higher matters than all my Labours. Polinarda beeing in presence, remembred well her Fathers words, and therfore she intended to shun that condemnation, saying to her selfe, Hée that winneth honour, ought to weare it. And he that commandeth the soule may easily ouer-rule the Passions of the minde: Let the knight then be rewarded as hée hath rightly deserued.

All this while, the Eyes of these two Louers so well charged theyr office, as Palmerin wished that Iuno had given him so much, as shée did sometime to Argus her Shepheard, that he might haue more ease in his affliction: for he thought it not enough, onely to beholde the Beautie of so rare and excellent perfection. Againe, hee was not a little tormented because Polinarda (to couer what shee would gladly not shoulddiscern) cast her looks on the ground, which sometime she likewise compelled him to do: but her Presence where he esteemed aboue all other earthly things, would not allow him that consideration. The Emperour at length commanded, that all the Figures of the Ladyes which hee had won in Combat, should be brought before him: but when he saw so manie, and of so contrarie qualities, hee could not but commende Syr Palmerins victorie. Then were diuers iudgements giuen of the beautie of the Portraits, eache one of the beholders after their seuerall opinions. Ptolome made a description of whom they were, and who did enter combate for theyr behalfes, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin. Whereat they all admyred: some of them commending their Complexions, others, their swéete young yeares, and all together the valor and prowesse of him that brought the conquest with him, whervpon the Emperour said. In good faith Syr Palmerin, I blesse the time that Fortune sent mee so good a knight

ight, and thinke not to carrie away all the glorie of your
rory your selfe, for I meane to haue part, because you gaue
r selfe mine. And would the Ladie you Loue were in
s Courte, or in my Empyre, to the ende that I might so as-
your in your Suite, as yee might be both mine. My Lorde
both Palmerin) the victorie is wholly yours, being gotten
your Knight, and if the Lady I loue were not vnder your
gument, then should I complaine of a greater matter then
oing with you, being obedient to your Highnesse, as your
uble Subiect and Seruant. With which answere the
perour seemed highly contented: and Trineus comming
his Sister Polinarda, saide:

Trust me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin,
n to any other Knight in the World beside, and rather ac-
t of him, then of the Duke of Lorraine, who maintaining
r Beautie, was ouercome by the Duke of Sauoye, and
r Picture placed at the feete of Lucemania, where yet it
remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, re-
ued the figure of the French Princesse in obeysaunce t
n. Polinarda not content with the vndiscreete enterpri-
the Duke of Lorraine, answered, In soth good Brothe
e Duke of Lorraine is none of my Knight and I reput
lmerin, to haue more Bountie and valour then the Duk
haue of wit or courage: therefore great maruell that h
as not slaine. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was of
ded with the Duke of Lorrayne, answered, you cannot
Daughter) forbid men to execute their owne pleasure, an
the Duke liked to enter the Combate for your Beautie, i
as for the honourable good will hee bare you, and albeit he
uld not reache his desire, yet haue you no cause to thinke th
orie of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of so rare a wi
d Iudgement, as any of her time, would multiply no mor
ords, but continued silent: Neuertheless, Palmerin re
embring the answer she made to Trineus, intreated her t
ope all the Portraits of all the Ladyes, determining to sen
hem to whome they belonged, according to their degrees a
birth,

Wyth and honour. Which shee thankfully accepted, spending this whole day in diuers delights, Palmerin b in the Euening in his Chamber, accompanyed with P me, sent his Dwarfe to the Princesse, to appoynt the of theyr next meeting : and shee seeing the Dwarfe, c him about the necke, demaunding of him what newes had brought her ?

None but good, Madame (answered the Dwarfe) my sister hath sent you the Bon-soir, and therewithall, his hu duety to your Highnesse: For, being your Knight, and li onely to do you seruice, he hath good hope that your vertu Nature will not forget, how many dangers hee hath pas your sake: and now dooth Loue appeale for his desire ward.

Wherefore (good Madame,) as you are heart fast, w your selues hand-fast, giue my Maister life, your selfe c sort, and make me happy, by carrying of this Message: I dolue by the Reuerend faith I beare you both, that I not depart without some gracious answere.

Polinarda smiling to heare Vrbanillo speake so ear by, said. The assurance thou giuest me of the trustie af on thou beares thy maister, doth not a little content m and pittie it were so good a Knight should labour all t while in vaine : Therefore perswade thy Maister, tha morrow at night I will meete him where wee were w and there will I resolue him to his owne content.

CHA

CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the night to the appointed place, to confer with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had together.

VRbanillo with chærefull countenaunce returned to his maister, declaring to him his talk with Polinarda, her swæt woks, her gracious answers, how cheisely shee loued him, and lastly her promise to mest him in the accustomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, she hath assured me to resolue you to your own content. And that is it I want (qd. he) for might I once receiue my cõtent, then should I think my trauailes rewarded. And doubt you not thereof said the Dwarfe, if she be a woman of her word. Then Prolome beeing present, asked the dwarfe if hee saw Bryonella. No in soth (quoth he) she was not in the princesse chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was she acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke she will be there with my Lady. The time being come, the Ladies were at the place with deuotion, answerable to those silent houres, and they? knights not fayling they? appointment, what pleasure on each side was conceiued, is not to bee enquired, for all wi-ings are nothing in respect of their contentments. Polinarda hauing her friendlye knight before her, so swæte a blush eclipsed her countenaunce, as would driue nature into a studie to fraame the like, and thus she began. Alas my wæte Friende, in what paine, anguish and heauinesse of

heart, hath your absence brought me? what teares have fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blood from my heart, renting sighs and ceaselesse acclamations, remembring our pleasures past, and present comfort, and the hope of better hap to come? What doleous conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder mee from seeing you againe? and not without a cause, believe me, for had you miscarried, neuer Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the vnfained loue I beare you, whereof (before I depart) I meane assuredly to resolue you, in requitall of your honourable trauailes for maintenance of my beautie. And hereof perswade your selfe good Knight, that to haue you, I refuse all other good fortunes whatsoeuer: and therefore I care not though it were openly knowen, how especially I prise your feare, loue, and esteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence, interrupted her in this manner. By the faith of your seruant, sweete Madame, the perrils, mishaps, and dangers I haue past since my departure, neuer deserued the very least of your complaints, nor could my endeuour procure such, as your incomparable perfections merrited, the only remembrance whereof, was sufficient to make me inuincible: wherefore sweete Illustresse, if I haue wonne any honor, your fauour was the meane, and your beautie gaue me the vertue, streaming so plentifully from your chaste eye, as the water from the Fountaine. To little purpose were it now to rehearse, the strange assaults, massacring thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I haue burned and continually béene crucified, since the houre it pleased you to let me see Fraunce: vndoubtedly the very meanest of my sufferings was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of your diuine fauor, which triumphing ouer death, shall make me liue continually. So that the desire to let you know how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to see you againe, gaue mee victory ouer your enemies, and

brought

brought mee safe thorow all extremities, to honour you as I do at this present. It now remaines Madame, that you regard the truth of my loue, the permanence thereof, and the instant passions worse then death to mee, yet with this prouiso, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen mee in greatest debilitie. And no where know I to seeke for pittie and support of my cares, if not onely by her who hath the soueraigne power to chase hence the cruell and euer threatning menaces of death, Forbeare good Lord, quoth shee, thus to talke of death, considering I cannot liue one houre without you, or holde I any comfort of my life, but onely in loueing you, to enioy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion torments you, but I haue a share therein, so deuoutly is my spirite consorted with yours. And therefore thinke not your oppressions greater then mine, for if you doe, it procéedeth by want of experience of feminine passions, the extremity whereof farre surmounteth your sexe. For which cause, to giue some rest to our long and ouertrauelled desires, I giue you héere my hand, and there withall a chast heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heauen and earth to witnes. Where is the wit so daintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so diligent, as can conceiue, report, or set downe in perfect colours, the ioyes of these louers? You fayre Lordings, and you likewise swéete Ladies, that long haue traueled in amorous affections, and in the end receiued the reward of your passions, by your owne conceits can imagine the content of these twaine: for Palmerin was in this opinion, that Iupiter had not the like pleasure with fayre Alemena, for whome hee caused one night to endure the space of thrée dies, as hee hadde with his gracious mistresse Polinarda. For now the manifolde strokes hee gaue for beautie, were here remembred, his daungerous trauailes in all places recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcomed, his teares, sighs, complaints, and feares resolued,

and lastly, his long, vnchangeable and most faithfull loue, friendlie rewarded. Let vs not heere forget, that Ptolome and Brionella were in the same predicament, for hee knowing her to bee of the noble and auncient ligne, beside, sole heyre to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honored with such a Wife: and therefore the like coniunction was made betweene them, so that now these Knights and Ladies were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremonie of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vrbanillo, and hee breakes off this pleasure, because the time was so farre spent, as they must needes depart: which with much adoo they did, leaning their Ladies examining their content, the Princesse some after, thus conferring with Brionella. Alas faire Friend, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you haue contracted your selfe to Ptolome without the Emperors consent: how will you answer when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who neuer feared nothing but the preuenting of her loue, answered, In soth Madame, you speake with great reason, you neuer giue counsell when the deede is done, and cannot bee remarked till it bee dispatched: would you haue all the good fortune your selfe, and suffer your Friende to enioy no part with you? trust mee that is vnconscionable dealing, for he that made you to loue, framed me to the selfe-same mettall. But I see you make the occasion to mee, to learne how to answere your owne deede: let vs referre all to him Madame, that appointed your choise by destenie, and mine by mine owne lyking. Many other pleasaunt speeches passed betweene them, and diuers times their knights came to visite them, till Fortune who will neuer suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of their loue: for there was a Messenger come to the Courte from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus deliuered his message.. Worthie Lord, the king of Norway my Maister, requires your assistance in his great distresse, against the king of Eng-

land,

and, who with a mightie and puissant Armie is entered
is dominions, where he hath made great waste and slaugh-
er of his people, in diuers skirmishes and conflicts passed be-
wéene them, so that hee neuer had like nede as at this in-
tant. Trust mee (quoth the Emperour) I will assist him
ith right good will, and his misfortune doth not a little
reue me, but I will take order for it immediatly, and my
lwer shall be with him so sone as possible may bee: with
hich answer the Messenger departed. Now as concer-
ng the cause of these warres, betwéene the warres of Nor-
aye and England, it was procured by displeasure of succor
at the King of Norway gaue to the king of Scots his bro-
er, who helde warre with England about the taking of
taine Shippes: the Emperour likewise his heauy ene-
y, and for that cause he promised helpe so sone to the King
s Nephew. Which when Trineus vnderstood, that his
ather declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his
loued Agriola, (whose loue no occasion could alter) hee
as greatly discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, de-
mined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Co-
, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to
Chamber, where hee would acquaint him with some
t of the sorrow hee conceiued, by the succour his Father
uld send to the King of Norwaye, against her Father
ose seruant he had vowed himselfe, and therefore (quoth
) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make
you. You know my Lord, saide Palmerin, that I will no
e obey you then the Emperour your Father, commaund
refore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall bee
nted. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you
accompany the power my Father sends by Sea, but
o much for me, that you, Ptolome & my selfe (vnknown
ny) may assist the King of England in his warres, by
ich meanes I doubt not to compasse the thing I most of
esire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedi-
ed to her seruice, and so well doe I hope to imploy my

paines, that she shall haue cause to loue mee, and regard
paine I suffer for her sake: and but I gaine the fo
purchase my loue, right soone and suddaine, shall you
of my death. You that haue felt the like torments can
of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my
ther, bee ause of the hatred he beares the King of Englan
uise me therefore good friend what I shall do.

These speeches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, s
hee must now againe depart from his Ladie: but bec
he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew how well hee
helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my
that I will labour diligently for your good, and shall
you to my vttermost, in that you beare such loue to the
cesse. And I am of the opinion, that hauing receiued th
der of Knighthood, which the Emperour your Father
not denie, it would auaile you much, to tell your Fathe
you desire (vnknowne) to aide the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demaund my aduise, I will
wel, as because the Armie cannot bee readie so soone,
honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towar
King, and so may we accomplish what wee so earnest
sire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he
on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour
how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and
necessary it was for him to go before the Armie, as Pal
and he had deuised together.

CH

CHAP. XLIIII.

ow Trineus was knighted, and what happened to him afterward.

N the morrow, this young prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessary he should be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperor at leisure, when hee might sollicite his highnesse with his suite: and vnderstanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to n, and on his knée thus began. Dread Lord and Father, so aled your Maiestie, it is now time I should receiue my er of knighthood, and more necessary now then at any o- time, in respect of my earnest desire to aide the King of eway my cozin in his wars. The Emperour marualling ence this humor should proceed, answered. Why Trineus ou thinke your selfe able to take so waighty a charge in d truly such honor is soone receiued, but to maintaine it t ought to be, and preuent the dangers incident therto, is e hard then you weene, and maketh proofe of the most co- ous stomack, in that neither paine, feare or danger must der, what matter of so great consequence doth command. pe. swade your selfe, that such as counselled you there- know scant themselues their duetie in those affaires, refore for a time haue patience, and deferre it till bet- bilitie: for I will send good store of other knightes in expedition, who shall well excuse you to the king my ne- w.

ineus not contented with this answer, replyed. In truth

my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is req
in chiualrie, I would not so boldly haue made this dema
therefore for such exceptions as you admitted, let mee n
beseech you be denied at this time: and let this induce
that such as are borne to gouerne kingdomes, if they
themselues onely to pleasure, without passing through
pykes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthy
be lifted to such honour. The Emperour hearing the b
minde of his Sonne, and that his wordes sauoured of
rage, conceiuing well thereof, answered. Since your n
is so earnest to be made knight, I am well contented,
I would haue it done honorably, and before a greater a
blie then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trin
there is no neede of triumph before victorie: let such p
remaine I pray you, till I haue wonne honour and act
by my deedes. The Emperour ioyfull of the Princes g
pinion, perswaded himselfe he should proue fortunate, wh
fore he graunted his request, so that Palmerin might ac
pany him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus
not sorrie, because in him consisted all his hope of suc
so his Father commaunded him to prepare himselfe fo
order, whereupon Trineus made himselfe a costly Ar
and another for Palmerin, the deuises being change
cause they intended to passe vnknowne. Now had the
perour leuied an Armie of tenne thousand good Scudi
the conduct whereof was appointed to the Counte Tol
a knight valiant and hardie, hauing had like charge in
dry occasions of warre: therefore so soone as all things
in readinesse, they were imbarked, and sayled with such
nesse of winde and weather, as soone after they tooke
ding in England. Where a while we will leaue retur
to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Brothers d
ture, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse trou
for her friend Ptolome: but the Princesse fearing new
flictions for the absence of her loue, came to her Bro
saying. I know not (Brother) who hath aduised yo
vent

be,ture so dangerously, our Couzin hauing assistance sufficient without hazarding your person, let mee then intreate you (good Brother) to affect occasions that promise better securitie. Better occasions Sister (quoth hee:) it is impossible, if it bee a thing allowable and vertuous to succour a straunger, how much more then is it to our own kinsman, especially, such a one as is our Couzin of Norway? therfore I pray you bee of good comfort till my returne. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your Marryage, looke that you consent not till I come home againe: for my not being here will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised: and her word so past, stode her in no small stead afterward, as you shall finde in the discourse following.

So soone as Trineus was prouided of all things fit for his knighthood, he came to the Emperour in this manner. I desire you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, hauing done my dutie as you commanded mee. With right good will my Sonne, sayde the Emperour, goe arme your selfe. Then went hee, Palmerin, and Ptolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trineus being in greene Armour, figured all ouer with hearts of Golde, and in his Shielde was Pourtrayed a Knight vnarmed, holding in his hand a Bowe bent, with an Arrowe ready to shoote against a great Tree, whereon hung a Scrole, which had written in it in Letters of Golde, this Motto: Madame, quand Mourray-ie? Whereby he meant, that the Loue which made him enterprise this Voyage, should beare him company till death. Palmerins Armour was all blacke, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Ladie, and in his Shielde for his Deuise, was figured a goodly Eagle, shrowding a little Byrde vnder his wings: declaring thereby the fauour he had receyued of his Mistresse. Soone after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where her Knighted his Sonne put his Spurre on his heele and gyrded his Sword about him: afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for ioye of this newe Knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to comfort theyr Ladies before their depar-

departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus beganne. Alas my Lorde, what griefe will your departure be to mée? with what patience can you thinke I am able to endure it? perswade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will bee my death, or at least a cause of such daunger as I shall neuer recouer. Bée well aduised therefore how you deale with mee, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then saue my life by your spéedie returne. These words were deliuered with such teares and reking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceiue the vehemencie of her griefes, and answering her heauinesse with as earnest oppression, saide: Sweete Ladie be perswaded, and temper your sorrowe with patience, considering the vnion of our spirites makes a sympathie of Afflictions: If then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to shúlde your owne perill, let mee intreate you to be resolued, in that my returne shall be with such expedition as you will commaund. But if you continue thus in Melancholie, you will too soone bewray what as yet should be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chiefly to séeke out a Knight, against whom I haue fought in France for your Beautie: as for any other matter you may believe me.

Whereupon hee reported his Combat with the Knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well for Palmerins promise, as the account hée made of Frysol) somewhat better quieted, to answere. If it be so my Lord, that your returne will be with such spéed, I shall then enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my Cares with as much patience as I can, and sée you fayle not your appoynted time: but tell me I pray you, what Armes beares the Knight of the Sunne, you speake off? which Palmerin describing, Polinarda remembred him, saying: My Lorde, I know now very well what hée is, For eyght dayes after your departure towards France, the Emperour my Father Knighted him, commanding

bing me to gyue him with his Sword, which I could not but obey: wherein the Knight glorying, solicited me with affections not liking me, which I pray you reuenge, being the man whome the matter nearest concerneth. After many other amiable conferences, the Knights humbly take their leaue of their Ladies, and in the morning betimes, the Mariners called on Trineus and his company to haste aboorde, because the wind serued well for England, which they performed with all spéd, hauing first taken their farewell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoysing sayle, they set on to Sea, and in good time came within the kenning of England: where wee will forsake them a while, and returne to the Emperours Armie, which he sent to the King of Norway his Nephew.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ How the Armie of the Emperour of Allemaigne arriued in England vnder the conduct of the Counte Tolano: and how they were discomfited.

REhearsed it hath béene already, howe the Emperour of Allemaigne promised the messenger of Norway, to send his maister the aide of tenne thousand men at Arms, of whome the Count Tolano was made Generall, and they arriued in England, without any resistance. The Counte vnderstanding by his Auant-courreurs, the Order of the Enemyes Armye, and where the King of Norwaye was Encamped, raunged his men in good order, and marched toward their Forte, which the King had made in

in the Duchie of Gaule, and which hee had destroyed during the time the Duke was in France, hauing there fortified the strongest Cittie, and the Hauen that stood fittest for the commoditie. Crenus at his returne with Frysol, as you haue heard, vnderstanding the spoyle of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes Iourney from his enemies. The Countie Tolano, hearing thereof, appointed his men in seuerall companies, and the next day he gaue such sharpe skyrmishes to the Gaules, as they were constrayned to keepe within their defences. Hereupon the Duke determined to bid them Battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, hee caused an Ambush of a thousand Light-Horsemen, to place themselues in a Forrest neere adioyning, of which companie Frisol was the Leader: and to prouoke the Norwayes to the Fielde, hee sent out certaine men at Armes well prouided, who scowted heare and there, to the ende the Allemaignes, who had been so hote the day before, should be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation, for so soone as the Allemaignes sawe the Englishmen so scattered, they dislodged themselues, and followed them, with the whole Armie of the King of Norway, because they were perswaded that they betooke themselues to flight: but the Gaules not dismayde with their comming, being but foure thousand Horse-men, and tenne thousand Foote-men, came valiantly against the Allemaignes Ensignes, and then beganne a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with their Reregard towardes the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of their intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest parte of his Power, but they had a worse welcome then they expected, for the Englishmen aduertised what they should doe, gathered vppon the Forrest side, charging their Enemyes with such a sharpe Assaulte, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Frisol perceiuing that the time was come to shew himselfe, calling his

squa-

manzon togither, cryed: Upon them valiantly my Friends, the spoyle is ours. So they entred pell-mell among the Allemains, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to beholde: for albeit they thought not of this deceyt, they were not ouer-wearyed with dalliance, as when they came to the assayt they could do nothing, but were slayne downe right, such valour shewed Frisol, and his fresh supply, forcing them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the Cittie of Tomar, which was strongly fortified. Whith when the King of Norway perceyued, hee stayed not long after them, because he saw it was not best for him, and therefore fled after them for companie at the hard heeles, and got the Cittie by good time, or else they had all perished. Thus remained Crenus Maister of the Fielde, and following his successe, the next day begyrt the Cittie of Tomar with Siege, swearing neuer to depart from thence, till he saw the Cittizens eyther through the Gates or the Walles. Yet had this courage of theirs beene some coled, if Frysol (like a good Captaine) had not cherished vp his men, when Crenus at one Saillie of the enemie lost two thousand men, and therefore saide. Why how now my louing Friendes and Companyons? will you be faynte at the houre of good Fortune? desire you not to purchase the vertue so highly esteemed? Know you not that we deale with people halfe conquered, and altogither discouraged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not change our Reputation with their feare and faintnes: you see me double strength good Friendes, if but with your good countenance you will make them knowe what cowardly creatures they are. Follow mee (braue Englishmen) and this very day will wee giue them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserued. These words renewed each others courage marueilously, so that the Duke with a fresh supplye beganne againe thus to animate them. You knowe my good Friendes, that although wee are but a handfull in respect of them, what successe we haue already had in our former encounters, so that with greater ease may wee now

con-

Conquere, weakening them so mightily as wee ha
Let vs not dismay then, but witnesse that the worst
mongst vs, is more Valiant and hardy in Armes, th
greatest Lorde that is in theyr Companie, eache man
fore cherish his hope, and bearde our Enemyes to they
teeth. The day following, the Enemios came forth at a
sterne-Gate, and holde the Dukes powes very good pla
the Norwayes being very well appoynted with Bow
Arrowes, gauled the Horse so cruelly, as they were gl
take theyr Campe: Whereupon the Counte Tolano in
of the day, followed vpon them with his Allemaigne C
laces, which Frysol perceyuing, mette him in the face
his English Squndaron, and giuing the spurres to his
ranne with his Launce quite through his bodie: Wh
the Allemianes much amazed, when they saw theyr G
fall dead from his Horse, determined valiantly to reuen
death, but Frysol and his men dealt with them so roun
the stoutest of them were glad and faine to make them
Yet had they hemde in Frysol, with such a troupe, as if
Duke had not speedily come with rescue, they had taken
and then beganne the sharpest bickering: For the Duk
Gaule and Frysol with theyr men, so bestyrred them, as
Allemaignes cleane discouraged, beganne to disorder th
selues, and with the Norwayes fledde to the Cittie, so fa
they coulde, where Frysol and his men had entred, but
the King of Norway not daring to come into the Fields,
there with men sufficient to resist his entrie. Thus
ned the victory of the Duke of Gaule, by the braue poli
of Frysol and his men, hee being generally commended of
whole Armie: and thus retyred the Allemains and Norw
to theyr shame and dishonour. After the Retrait sound
the King of Norway, hee sent to the Duke to demaund
for foure and twenty-houres, to the ende they might bury
dead, among whome was the Counte Tolano: which
ing graunted him, hee caused the Countes bodie to bee
balmed: who by the counsell of his Lordes and Capta

as dont home into his Countrey. The King and his comp secretly in the Night embarqued themselues, to ioyne ch the King of Scots, who expected his comming, and then the Cittizens sent word to the Duke, that by the breake daye they would yeld vp the keyes of theyr Gates to him: reupon Frysol was Lieutenant-Generall for the Duke Gaule, and entred honourably the Citie of Tomar, where Englishmen refreshed themselues for two or three dayes, recompence theyr paines with profite and pleasure. The enie was no sooner departed vnder Saile, but there arose a terrible Tempest, as the most part of theyr Vessells pe- ed in the Sea, and the other were so scattered, as they had the sight of one an other: yet was some small number maining with the King, as well of Allemaignes, as of his e Countreymen: So getting safe to shore in his Kingdome, he determined a reuenge for his great ouerthrow, but ould not compasse his intent, as you shall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XLVI.

How after the Princes Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were arriued in England, they went to the Courte, and what torments the Prince endured for his Loue to the faire Lady Agriola.

TRineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, being landed within foure dayes iourney of the Kings Campe, which was prouided against the K: of Scots, were aduertised that the King staied but the comming of the Duke of Tintriel, and then he went to bidde his enemy battell, for that hee had boldly presumed vppon parte of his Realme,

Realme. The Garders of the Porte where they Landed, ing they were strangers, would suffer them passe no furt till they knewe theyr Names, whither they went, and w they came for? Palmerin answering on the behalfe of th all, saide:

Good Friends, we are Grecian Knights and trauel stra Countreys to seeke aduentures: and because wee heard your King menaceth warre against his ancient and mal lent enemie, the K: of Scots, wee came to offer our selues our seruice to him, so please his Maiestie to accept it. T answere so well contented the Officers, as by theyr mea they were conducted to the Courte, where they were hon rably entertained, and two dayes together were there fe sted with the King: In which time Trineus vnderstood, the Queene and her fayre Daughter, were aboue two miles thence: Whereupon, the next morning they tooke Journey thither, and by Dinner time they came where the Queene lay. But it fell out so happily for Trineus, as fore they came to the place where the Court aboade, they the Queene and her traine, who daily went to s chappell, a quarter of a mile from the Cittie, to heare diuine ser as she kept it for a continuall exercise, and with her was fayre Agriola her Daughter. The Queene and all her L dyes alighted from off theyr Palfreyes, they entred the Ch pell, the Prince well regarding the Goddesse of his h who belike making her Prayers more briefe then her ther, came forth with her wayting Ladyes, to walke v a companie of greene Trees uere adioyning. Trineus s her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a ma of assurance, least hee should bee surprized as Acteon when he found Diana bathing among the Nymphs. He ing thus carried away with maruellous conceyt of her B tie, saluted not the Princesse as shee passed before him, hearde Palmerin, who reproned him for omiting his c tesie: but wading further and further into this Amorous rie, spake so lowde, as he was easily hearde in this manne

heauens, will you suffer the perfections of a Ladie so di-
nelie accomplished, to be ỹ cause of my vndeserued death?
hen may the time come for me, to let her vnderstand my
esire to doo her seruice? or how might shee know the loyall
fection I beare her? One of the Ladies of honor attending
the Princesse, reputing his words vnwise & ouer-bold,
nswered. Why Sir knight, where learned you so little
urtship, as when the fairest in the Westerne world pas-
h before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation? I
ubt not what is counted honestly and vertue among men
qualitie, with you is esteemed harsh and vnciuill, which
akes me repute you more meete for the kitchen, then to
are the honourable office and rich Armes of a knight, as
u doo. Trineus as it were awaked out of a traunce, said.
h swéete Ladie pardon me, for by my faith, I can neither
l what you said, nor well where I am my selfe: for euen
you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to the very heart,
death will soone arrest me without remedie. The Ladie,
ho knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus.
Were it not better then for you to be in the field, then here
this folish and vndiscréte pensiuenesse? It is true Ladie,
oth the Prince) that at this time I haue shewed my selfe
mannerly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame
together to bee throwne on mee, ignorant who the Ladie
as which you speake of: for wee are straunge knightes,
d are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to aide
d succour the king in his warres, with our vttermost en-
uours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no more
rade done our dutie to your Mistresse, may it please you
entreate her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for
isfaction whereof, wee will go serue the king her father in
tell, where we doubt not so well to behaue our selues, as
ll deserue our pardon, if so be shee will not at this instant
fauour vs. And I glably would, faire Ladie, that such
uice, should bee done by her commaundement, for our
ength and vertue by her affections augmented, will at-

tribute the honor to her that so graciously assisted vs, wh
fore, so please you to make knowne our good intent to wa
her, we shall for such kindnes remaine indebted to you. T
Ladie tooke pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially p
ceyuing the zeale of him and his companions, to imploy t
valour on the Kings behalfe, which caused her immediat
dow this message to the Princesse, who at that instant (a
thing fatall to her) was wounded with loue: wherefo
she sent them answere by her Gouernesse, that shee en
tained them as her Knights, and as her Seruants de
them to goe aide the King her Father, yet would shee n
consent to pardon them, till the renowne of their exploi
might shew them to deserue it. Trineus tooke this ans
for better aduantage then the Princesse thought on, acco
ting himselfe happy by such a good beginning. and then
saide to the Ladie, I thinke my selfe (fayre Ladie) one of
most fauoured by fortune, hauing the meane to obey m
Mistresse in her commaund, and hope to execute her c
in such sort, as I shall deserue the grace shee doth ne
nie mee, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreate y
to yelde thankes for her princely kindnesse. The Lad
turning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus de
her, whereupon shee turned herselfe, and gaue them a co
tenance of fauour, which was answered by Trineus, P
merin, and Ptolome, with great reuerence, & the Pri
(shewing herselfe not too stately towardes the Kni
with her hand and gesture gaue a signe of her content, w
was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Q
comming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her
mounted on horsebacke, taking their way to the Co
gaine: but when Trineus had lost the sight of them, h
derfull vexations began to assaile him, so that he sayd
Palmerin, Ah, my good Friend, how happie may that m
account himselfe, whose fortune honors him with the
tie of Agriola? Ah sir Palmerin, I feele my selfe so extr
lie tormented, as I doubt my death will be inevitable.

ell me the truth and dissemble not, how thinke you of my
Mistresse? is thee not a Ladie more then diuine? In good
with my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France
olde vs, was but fables, in that she exceedeth report beyond
ll opinion: notwithstanding, it is necessarie for you to nou-
ish your hope, hauing thus spoken to her, and bewrayed
our afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of
our enterprise will cause the ende fall out to your content.
o rode on these three Knights, pleasing their humors with
heir seuerall iudgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had
me such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted
romise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to chaunge his
mcie. The nert day they arriued at the King of Englands
mpe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pit-
hed their Tents beyond all the other: and sone after came
e Duke of Trintriel, bringing with him a number of har-
emen at Armes, so that in short time the Kings strength
as such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Here-
on the King assembled his counsell, and concluded, that
e nert day they would goe seeke out the King of Scots,
ho in two encounters had the vpper hande, which made
im so preemptorie, as hee perswaded himselfe vtterly to con-
und the King of England: who raysing his power, folow-
d so diligently, as the third day after hee encamped with-
halfe a mile of his enemie, that had besieged the Towne
Corsania, and had brought it ready to yelde, but that the
ing preuented it by the strength he brought.

CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betweene the King of England, and the King of Scots.

When the King of Scots vnderstood the comming of the King of England; and that in all hast hee would bid him battaile, hee would no longer busie himselfe in besieging Corfania, but withdrew a little for his better aduauntage, conferring with his Captaines about their present affayres, concluding to offer the enemie skirmishes, because thereby they would know their intent notwithstanding hee gaue order to prepare for battaile, because hee knew the King of England came for no other purpose. The Englishmen not suffering the Scots to haue any leysure to fortifie themselues, were by the King the next morning commaunded in aray, and all wings and squadrons appointed: the Duke of Trintriel was made leader of the auauntgarde, wherein likewise were Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome: and to the Dukes Brother was committed the charge of the arreargard: and being all ready to march on, the King himselfe beganne this Oration. I thinke my Friends, that no one of you, but sufficiently is acquainted in what respect wee continue this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to saue the liues of you, your wiues and children, and your goods, which the enemie would violently spoile and take from you, intending to throw perpetuall bondage and slauerie on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties? will you

not maintaine your auncient renowne, which is to bee Lordes and commaunders of the Scots? assure your selues, that how strong soeuer our enemie be, I hope with the aide of God, your vndaunted courages, and the right of our cause, to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I know that our enemie hath not one man in his Armie, endued with such an entire hart and magnanimous courage, as you are, nor that valueth his title of honour with his life, as you doe: and therefore if wee march on valiantly, continuing resolute and confident together, euerie man labouring for his Prince, Countrey, friende, and fellow, and God for vs all, your forwardnesse will make them fearefull, and your verie countenaunces enough to conquere. Euerie man then bee chearefull, with a desire to vanquish. And here I vow to you on the worde of a King, that if fortune stande so well with vs, as to winne the day, neuer shall the Scots hereafter dare to lift vp themselues against vs. Thus did the King of England animate his men, and so marched on in good array to the sight of their Enemyes, who by this time had emparled themselues in order of Battell: their Auant-gard conducted by the Marquesse of Monthel, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine Battell, and the Rere-ward led by the king of the Ile of Magdalen: and as the King of England had encouraged his Souldiers, so beganne the King of Scots to hasten his men in this manner. The time is now come (loyall Subiects, and deere Friends) that the pride of the English must be abated by the valour and Prowesse of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes the occasion which calleth vs to the Fielde, there is no one of you but will blame his Progenitors, for staying so long time to recouer, what by true Patrimonie belonged vnto them, and by the Kings of England, (most Tyrannous Vsurpers) against all right, violently taken from our Auncestours. Will you not then recouer your owne, and reenter on those Possessions, from which your Fathers (against all right and reason) were expulsed? Duty doth challenge it at your handes, being the good not onely for your

selues, but for your children and successors. Would you then loose so good opportunitie, to reestablish things so lost? Are your hearts more timerous then your enemies? are your mindes made of worse mettall then theirs? No, no, wel am I assured that the least among you, is of higher vertue and account then the best in their company. If it hath bene their custome, (as they themselues vaunt) to tryumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confesse with patience, that they haue no such right or custome to vanquish, as in thrée skirmishes alreadie we haue sufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and vnconquerable spirites you entertained your enemies. Dismay no more now (my good Friendes) then you haue done, let each mans swordе make his enteraunce amidst his foes, and fauour one anothers life, so shall swéete successe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they discerned the English power eager to encounter, and so the Armies méeting, began a dreadfull and daungerous battaile. There might you heare the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets sounde, the Clarions ring, the Phifes warble, Launces shiuered, knights dismounted, footemen scattered, heades defended, armes and bodies wounded, some crying, other dying, a matter more then lamentable to beholde, and so long continued this cruell and bloodie conflict, as the most part of the Vauntgarde were slaine, sore wounded, or taken prisoners. Which when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince so hardie and valiaunt as might bee, commaunded the maine battaile to giue the Charge, in the midst whereof hée was in person: whereupon the fight began againe much more fierce then before, so that yee might haue heard the Horses storme, the Armour clatter, and on euery side behelde good and venturous Knights giue vppe their liues. At this furious onset, Palmerin séeing the Scots to retyre for aduantage, cryed to the King of England, Why he now my Lord? doo you forget your selfe? why do you not follow on with your maine battaile, séeing the enemie playes vpon aduantage? chéerefully let vs vpon them, for the

will be ours. The king seeing that Palmerins counsaile was verie expedient, commaunded his men to march on valyantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thoroughly busied. Palmerin fearing least Trineus would bee ouer venturous, because the yong Prince was marualious forward, desired him not to runne to farre into daunger, but keepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessitie required. With these words hee ranne vpon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the king of England following him at an inch, deliuering true testimonie of his inuincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle Magdalen, piercing his Launce quite through his bodie, so that hee fell dead among his owne Souldiers: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but where ere hee came, he layd his enemie at his fete, so that the Scots wondered at the behauiour of these three knights. When the King of the Isle Magdalen vnderstood the death of his Brother, incensed with vnquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till hee came where Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his knightes shewing the King the man that slue his brother, whereupon hee making towards Trineus, lifted vppe his Sworde, and thought to haue slaine him, but Palmerin keeping betweene them, sayd. To me Captaine, to me, and so the king and hee encountered together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two or three places, for which hee made such recompence to the King, as fastening his Sword on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, hee fell dead to the ground. The sight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to reuenge the king of the Isle Magdalens death, as to defend their owne king, whose danger they feared. In this hote skirmish, the kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other with their forcible strokes, as the king of England was vn-

horsed and sore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his deere friendes Father in such perill, buckled with the King of Scots so valiantly, as hee gaue him many a cruell Wounde, and had not his men made haste to conuey him through the throng, hee had beene slaine by Trineus, so was the King of England mounted againe, and reuenged his sorow on his Enemie with maruellous Valour. There triumphed the three Grecian Knightes, with inexplicable honour, the Englishmen making such hauocke among the Scots, as vtterly dispayring, they fledde: one part to a Forrest neere at hand, and the other part towards the Sea, to their Ships, the king getting into one of them to saue his life, by the helpe and meanes of one of his knights, that lent him a good Jennet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sailed thence the King with greater shame, then did the Emperor Antonius from Octauius Cæsar, leauing his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sort, as many of the poore Scots chose rather to runne into the Sea, and drowne themselues, then to fall into the handes of their conquering enemies.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Of the retreate of the King of Englands armie, and the honour he did to the three strange Knights.

After the King of England was Master of the fielde, hee caused the retreate to bee sounded, and his men called together, commaunding likewise that search should bee made through the field, to succour such as were sore wounded, and to burie the deade, least the ayre

ryze should bee infected, whereupon the Englishmen toke the spoile of their enemies, chiefly their bag & baggage which they had left behind them. In the meane while the king withdrew himselfe into his Tent, where remembring the great service of the three strange knights, hee commaunded his Nephew Cerides to seeke them immediately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding vppe their woundes: and being not a little glad of his good fortune, hee came to Palmerin, saying. Gentleman, the king my Uncle earnestly desireth you to come to him, because hee will neyther enter the towne nor vnarme himselfe, till hee heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleaseth him, said Palmerin, to commaund, wee humbly obey, wherefore wee pray you Sir to returne his maiesty our dutifull thankes, and diligent attendance. After Cerides was departed, they resolued among themselues (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should bee the cheefest among them, and him they would honor as their Lord, because the prince feared to be knowne of such account should bee made of him: so went they presently to the kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the king (albeit hee was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embraced them louingly one after another, not suffering them to kneele before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Worthy Gentlemen, how welcome you are I cannot expresse, for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustained this day great foyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then worthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my word it shall not bee denied: in meane while I pray you let mee haue your Companie, because I will see your hurtes carefully attended. The knights with great reuerence accepted the kings noble offer, and were conducted into a fayre Tent nert the kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their wounds, and afterward they came and supped with the king. And because the king intended on the morrow to goe refresh himselfe at the

Towne

Towne of Corfania, which before had bene cruelly beset by the Scots, to giue God thanks for the happy victorie, a solemous Sermon was made before him, by the Archbishop Canterbury, to whom likewise hee gaue order for entertainment of such as had bene slaine of account, and in that place for memorie of his good Fortune, hee caused a goodly Monasterie to be builded, and dispatched a Poste presently to aduertise the Queene and the Noble Lords of his good successe.

Now was his Maiestie very desirous to knowe the state straunge knights, that had so valiantly assisted him, especially, the man that saued his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to see them, demanding how they fared? For (quoth he) we will now set forward to Corfania, where wee will make you better entertainment then we can do here in the Field. Then mounted they all on Horsbacke, and rode to Corfania, where the King remained, till he and his knights were better recouered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintern L: high Marshall of England, committing to his charge ten thousand men, commanding him to chase all the Scots out of his kingdome, whersoeuer he could find them, and to settle to his Highnesse vse, the Townes and Castles, which they before had in vse: which the Duke executed with such expedition, as hee left not a Scot in any Village or Hamlet, placing faithfull Officers for the King in euery Jurisdiction.

During these labours of the Duke, the King euery day visited these three knights, and finding Palmerin at a time convenient, hee requested to knowe of whence hee was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (quoth he) not to hyde your selues frō mée, because I shall not be in quiet till I knowe, that I may remunerate your deserts according to your persons. Palmerin, who now feared to be discouered, could not readily well deuise what answere to make, yet at length in great humilitiy, thus said; Wée would desire your Maiestie, that it might so stand with your good liking, as that time to excuse the knowledge of our present affaires, as also what wée are: yet thus farre will I resolue your Highnesse

that

et wee are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court
the king of Macedon, who in seeking strange aduentures,
ue trauelled many Prouinces, and now at length came in-
your kingdome, well stored at this time with knights Er-
nt, and gouerned (as we well perceyue) by a King so graci-
s, as no king where we yet haue come doth the like. For
s cause my Lorde, as also vnderstanding that the king of
cors menaced warre against you, came wee into your coun-
ry, to doe you seruice in all obeysance, as the very simplest a-
ng your Souldiers, Trust me (said the king) I haue well
ed your seruice, and a man might be deceyued in expecting
ter assistance. For which I rest yours, in ought I may,
le I liue: but if you would Name your selues, then
uld I know to whome I were indebted, as also that my
bjects might honour you accordingly. That (qd. Palme-
) will neither profit nor preiudice your Maiestie, let suffice
n I beseech you, the vnfained good will and seruice we owe
your Highnesse. The king, seeing he could not get what
e would, changed his talke, saying: Was it you Syr, that
the day of Battell was Armed all in black: Yea my Lord,
d Palmerin, and this knight (poynting to Trineus) is my
other, who shelded you from daunger against the king of
cors. Ah deere Friends (quoth the king) this made me so
portunate: And may it like you to stay in my Courte,
will regard you according to your speciall deseruings, as
nely knights of the world, in my fauour, yelding thanks
Heauen, for the good I haue receiued by your meanes.
ubly did the three knights regratiate the king, promising
a while to soiourne with him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIX.

¶ How the Queene of England was aduertised of victory against the King of Scots, and the ouer... of his whole Armie.

WHen after the King of England, ha... tydings to the Queen of his god fo... and the honour hee intended to th... Knights of Greece: the messeng... so speedy, as the second day follow... came where the Queen kept her C... & presented her the letters frō the... her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the Battell, ... the rare exployts of the three Grecian Knights, and how ... of them preserued the Kings life, omitting nothing tha... needfull to be reported, and how the King intended to... with the three Knightes in great Royaltie to London, ... therefore shee should prouide equall Entertainment. ... Queene highly contented with these Newes, demaund... the Messenger if hee knew the three Knights, that ga... stance to the King. Pointed Madame, answered th... senger, neyther yet did I see them, but at the time I wa... patched with my message. Agriola finding in her se... puissance of a little god that made Loue, suddenly susp... that these strange Knightes were they which shee saw ... Chappell, and therefore saide. I pray thee tell me my Fr... what Armes beare the Knights: One of them Mad... (quoth hee) who seemes the very best Knight in the wo... in grene Armour, and that is hee that saued the King your ... he...

thers life, when the King of Scots had neere slaine him, but he remounted my Lord, giuing his Enemy such a dangerous wound with his Launce, as it was greatly doubted hee had killd him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the principall occasions of our victorie. This Knights Companion in black-Armour, behaued himselfe with wonderfull Chiualrie: for as a Lyon makes hauocke in a Heard of Cattell, so did hee cut, slash, and mangle the Scots, as the very hardyest durst not abide before him. The third is in blacke Armor, sparkled all ouer with white Roses, a Knight of no lesse courage then his companions, and one that fought for England, with incredible prowesse. Let mee die, saide Agriola to the Quéene, if these be not the Knights that past by this Cittie, when we went to the Chappell to performe our exercise: and therewithall shee rehearsed what speeche her Gouernesse had with them, and what shee commaunded them. In soth Daughter (quoth the Quéene) your Gouernesse and you may well be blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you therfore when they returne, let your former fault be sufficiently recompenced. That shall I not faile to doe saide Agriola. So the Quéene honourably rewarded the Messenger, sending him backe with answere, that the Kings charge should be effectually executed. The King aduertised of the Quéenes replye, sette forward with the Knights of Greece, and his Trayne to the Court, and by the way, remembring the power sent by the Emperour of Allemaigne to the King of Norway, hee said to Palmerin. I cannot sufficiently maruaile, gentle knight, why the Emperor should declare himselfe mine enemie, and gaue assistaunce to the King of Norway, against mee, considering I neuer did any thing might deserue his displeasure: but I sweare by the faith of a King, that I will reuenge my wrong, and let him assure himselfe, that while I haue one foote of ground or a dozen of my Soldiers to helpe mee, I will neuer haue peace with him: to molest mes within mine owne dominions: by God, my Friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displea-

sed.

sed Trineus, but especially Palmerin, who answered. In my opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as dutie bound him, in respect he could not honestly refuse to ayde the King of Norway his Couzin, and hereof I can assure you, in that I haue sometimes beene in his Court, that hee is one of the wisest, and best gouerned Princes that euer I could heare of. Wherefore (bée it spoken vnder correction) your Maiestie should forget this light offence, and consider if the like had beene done towards you, you would haue no lesse. When the King heard him so support the Emperours cause, hée presently iudged him to bee of his Courte, and therefore saide. Are you he Syr, that woonne such honour and renown in France, at the Combat maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Loue of his Ladie? If you be so, I pray you doo not denye it, for I shall henceforth thinke my Courte most happie, to harbour the most Excellent, among all Knightes: and I promise you I am so iealous of mine owne conceyte, as you can hardly perswade mée otherwise, such Experience haue I made of your Bountie and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting least he should now be certainly knowne, answered. We most humbly haue intreated your Maiesty heretofore, and so we doo now again, that you would not enquire of whence we are, suffiseth your Highnesse, that wée are his humble Seruants, in any thing that shall like him to commaund vs. The King this hearing, repented himselfe that he had beene so importunate, for hée feared least his spéeches would make them forsake his companie, wherefore by this time being comr néere vnto his Pallace, he sayd, What I haue saide Gentlemen, I hope shall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest desire to know you. By and by ouertooke them the Duke of Tintriel, who went to restore the Crowne, (as you haue hearde) what the Scots vsurped, and he aduertised the King, that the Quéene and her Ladies were ridden to a Castle about foure miles from London to solace themselues: whereuppon the King resolued to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not sorie, such

was

was his desire to see his faire Friende, whose Loue still crossed him with so many Passions, as hee seemed a man of another World, and did not his wounds seeme somewhat to couer his Disease, hardly could hee haue found out any shifte to conceale it so closely, wherefore hee beganne with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen Friend, that the good hope of my Loue made me leaue my Fathers Court, and to preuent my meaning consisteth onely in you: Nowe in respect of my forcible Captiuitie, being vnprouided of strength, sence, or any meane to discouer my Loue to her, who onely can helpe mee: I intreat you by the inuiolable leagne of our amity, that whē you shall chaunce to speake with the Goddesse of my life, my paines and anguishes may serue for my Salutations, and imparting to her the extremitie of my sorrowes, shee may well perceyue in what estate I am, and what need I haue now of her gracious pittie. These words were deliuered with such store of sighes and teares, as Palmerin was amazed thereat, albeit hee knewe howe heauy the burthen was, and how it exceeded patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his Mistresse Polinarda, to bee as insupportable, as the presence of fayre Agriola, (not daring to speake to her) was to Trineus: whereupon he answered. My Lord repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in such sorte, as you shall haue no cause to bee Mal-content, or the Princesse any reason to be ingratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarfe did carrie this message? in my opinion (through the whole world) you could not finde a more fitte fellow, such is his subtile and present inuention, as hee will proue the onely string to your bow. Alas sayd the prince, I care not who were imployed herein, so I were sure of comfort. Then was the Dwarfe called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is well knowne to thee Vrbanillo, with what good will I would do any seruice I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindnes I haue receiued of my Ladie his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope shall one day be betweene vs by his meanes. So often haue

I made Experience of my loyall seruice and fidelitie, in my chiefest and very nearest affayres, as well may I impart to thée, the secrets of my Noble Companyon, perswading my selfe of thy surety and secrecie. It now remaines that thou pleasure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his Loue to the Princesse Agriole, as thou diddest for mée to my Mistresse Polinarda: but aboue all things haue regard, that thou bewray not of whence, or what wee are, yet must thou affirme her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lordes in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) I was neuer yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loath were I now to beginne: but because I am such a little withen fellow, you make mee your Broker in these perilous Loue-matters. Notwithstanding, I will doe it though I dyed for it, esteeming my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There can no inconuenience arise hereby to thée (quoth Palmerin) but profit euery way: be not enemie then to thine owne good. What will I neuer (saide the Dwarfe (and well might the Ladie bee iudged vnprouided of reason, and very farre from vnderstanding, if she make refusall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if hee knew it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this Enterprise can not but fort to good. The Dwarfes words pleased so well Trineus, as hée toke him in his armes, saying: I commend my selfe and my happinesse to thée. Let me alone (quoth Vibanillo) if I bring you not hearbs that shall cole this hot Feuer, then let mee neuer bee counted for a tall man: So went hée about it as you shall vnderstand hereafter.

CHAP.

CHAP. L

How the King of Englād went to the Castle to the Queene and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three strange Knights.

NEwes beeing brought to the Quéene, that the King was not farre off, shee sent a verie honourable traine to méete him, and with them his sonne the yong Prince Fredericke, ten yéeres olde, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promised great hope in time to come. Hee beeing made reuerence to his Father, and the other Princes, demaunded for the straunge Knightes, and saluting them with such kindnesse as was rare in a Childe, hee rode betwéene Trineus and Palmerin, giuing them harty thankes for their friendly succour to his Father, without which, (as hee, as the Quéene my Mother tolde mee, hée had dyed, and wee all bene distressed. By this tyme they were come to the Castle, all the way so thicke pestered with people, as there was no rowme to stirre among them, euerie one crying, Happie be the Knights that foyled our enemies. So entring the Castle, in the vttermost Court they mette the Quéene and her Ladyes, among whom fayre Agriola shyned, as beautifull Venus among the other starres, wherewith the Prince of Allemaigne was so nipt in the head, as if offendour with his guilt before a Iudge, so that not regarding what yong Fredericke, or the other Lords courteously said to him, hee was readie to fall beside his horse with meere mach gazing: But Palmerin suddainly twitching him

softly, said. Fie my Lord, what meane you to forget your selfe thus? see you not her that is ordayned yours, and that you not triumph in your happie sight, but sitte as one vtterly discouraged? For shame let passe this pusillanimitie and with cheerefull countenaunce goe giue her the good morrow. The Prince did so, but with such timerous conceite as hauing saluted the Mother, hee durst not speake to the Daughter: who imagining the best, and that bashfull reuerence did so with holde him, shee came to him in this manner. Are not you sir, the Knight in the greene Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladyes to ayde my father in his warres? I am sayde Princesse, quoth hee, and what I haue done, was at your commaundement, the vertue whereof gaue me such strength, as some of the Scots haue felt to their cost: but had I gone vnprouided of such armour I am perswaded I could neuer haue returned aliue. It now remaines, spake Ladie, that according to the request I haue made your Ladie, it would please you to remitte his offence, who deserued the sharpest punishment can bee deuised, for not honouring that Princesse, which carryes the Palme from all Ladyes liuing. In trueth, my Lord, sayde the Princesse, not onely is your fault to bee forgiuen, if it could be named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my vttermost power, , seeing by your meanes my father in safetie, and the Realme of England deliuered from the tyrannous seruitude of the Scots: wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any steede towards the King my Father, you shall commaund me to my vttermost. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks and sayde. Beleeue mee, Madame, the very least title of your good will, is recompence to mee more then sufficient, and would prouoke such affection in mee towards your seruice, as you could not demaund the thing, but I should with dutifull willingnesse performe it, as I doubt not the better occasions shall make manifest vnto you. Then entred they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was

prouided

rouided, as will aſke more time to report, then leyſure will
mit. Likewiſe here to ſet downe the wonderfull paſſions
f the amorous Prince Trineus, in regard of a Lady ſo ex-
ding in perfections, ſurpaſſeth my capacitie: but hee that
ſeated ſo oppoſite to ſo faire a creature, and loues ſo ear-
neſtly as Trineus, yet dare not ſpeake leaſt he ſhould be ſpy-
, may iudge of that which I cannot vtter. But ſeing the
berty of ſpeech was denied, the ſpedy eye poſted betweene
them with ſweete conueyances, and ſtill muſt ſhes counte-
nance the ſtraunger Knights, till fearing to be taken tar-
die, ſhe cloſely conferred with the Princeſſe Eufemia, daugh-
ter to the Duke of Norgalles, ſaying: What thinke you Co-
en of theſe ſtrangers? are they not the ſeemelyeſt perſona-
es that euer you ſawe, both in fauour, countenance, good
grace and hardineſſe? I am of the opinion, that although
they report themſelues but as ſimple Knights errant, they
e doubtleſſe great Lords, deſcended of Noble and Prince-
y parentage: as one may eaſily gather by their ciuill and
vertuous behauiour, which is euermore the witneſſe of true
Nobility. Theſe words cauſed Eufemia to marke well Tri-
eus, as her Cozen Agriola did, which hee perceiuing, and
udging that they talke of him, his alterations were ſo ſen-
ble as they might be eaſily diſcerned: for the more they eyed
im, the greater was his torment, till the Table being with-
drawne, he had ſome eaſe in opening his minde to Palmerin,
whoſe comfortable words were as good to him as reſtora-
tiues. Agriola on the other ſide eſcaped not free, for her eaſe
was no greater when ſhe aroſe, then when ſhe ſate downe,
and that muſt be little, hauing ſo dainty a diſh before her to
fill her ſtomacke.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mount-
ed on horſe-back, ſetting towards London, & God knowes
the Prince was not farre behinde them, hauing onely by
the regard of her, with whoſe rare beautie hee could neuer
ſatisfie his eyes. And as they rode thorowe a Forreſt, the
King ſeeing the Trees ſo greene and delightfull, and becauſe

the heate of the day hindered their trauaile, hee caused his Pauilions and Tents to bee there presently pitched, and intended to dine there vnder the cole trées. Dinner being ended, hee would nédes go course the Hare, wasting the afternoone in that pasture, and on the next day, rode to chase a Hart which was taken in the foyles, and therewith all a huge wilde Boze, the mightiest that euer was seene, hauing wounded him in so many places, as the Dogs and Blodhoundes might easily tracke him. Afterwarde they rowsed a fallow Déere, when the Huntsmen made the woodring so brauely with winding their Hornes, and the Greyhoundes pursued the course so spédily: as Pelemedes chase was not comparable to this, till in the ende the Déere was taken. These pleasures finished, the King with his company returned to his Tents, shewing to the Quéene and her Ladies the fruits of their pastime, saying. I promise you Madame, I thinke these Grecian knightes excell in euery thing: for as in chiualrie, so this day haue they shewed themselues excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne may compare with them. By this time the Tables were couered for Supper, all which time was spent in discoursing of theyr sports: till the good night giuen on all sides, the thrée knightes withdrew themselues into their Tent. All these pleasures made not Vrbanillo forgetfull of his Maisters charge, wherefore practising how to accomplish it effectually, hee found meanes to come acquainted with the Ladyes attending on the Princesse, and in respect he attended on the knights of Greece, he was licenced the oftner to theyr company. The next morning, the king and the knights walking into the Woods, the Dwarfe watching time to deliuer his message, made so many walkes and returnes before the Princesse Pauillion, as at last she espyed him, and calling him to her, sayd: I pray thee, my Friend, by the faith thou bearest thy Maister, tell mee the trueth of a matter I shall aske of thee: Madame (quoth the Dwarfe kneeling on his knee) commaund what you please, for there is nothing

(in)

(my Mistrisse preiudice excepted) but I will truely tell you. Tell which of the three, sayde the Princesse, is thy Maister? My Maister (quoth the Dwarffe) hath not his second in all perfections, he it is that was in the blacke Armour, who in the battell for your Father did so many wonderfull exployts, as farre exceedeth the fabulous reportes of sir Gawine or Launcelot du Lake. In soth (quoth shee) so haue I heard, and beside thy dutie reserued to thy Maister, I see thou canst lette him forth for a most hardie knight: but tell mee of whence he is? what are his companions? and why do they make it so daintie to be knowne? Herein Madame, sayde he, I cannot with my dutie aunswere you, for I am restrayned by a former promise, not to reueale the least matter that may be hurtfull to them. Neuertheless, in regard of the reuerent good will they beare you, and that I would not haue you offended with such an abiect creature as I am, I would gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will promise me on your princely worde, that what I reueale shall neuer be discouered by you. Perswade thy selfe thereof, sayd the Princesse, and loke what thou sayst, by my honor, shall neuer turne to thy after harme. Then know sayde Madame, (quoth hée) that the greene knight is of the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, louing a Ladie as his proper life, for whom hée hath left his Countrey, parents & friends, to come and do her seruice. The blacke knight, as I haue already tolde you, is my maister, and further then this I may not tell you. What am I the nearer my desire, quoth shée, by this aunswere? eyther thou shouldest haue said nothing, or else thoroughly satisfyed mée, for now I can not bee quieted, till thou tell mee what Ladie it is, that the greene knight loues so déerely: let mée not make so many intreaties, for I promise ts thée againe, by the faith of a Princesse, that neuer shall any creature know it by my meanes. You vrge me so farre, quoth the Dwarfe, and haue made me such great promises, as I am constrayned (beyond the charge giuen by my maister) to acquaint you with the trueth, in

respect, the fault will be greater in you to make refusal, then in yeelding. Resolue your selfe therefore good Madame, that the braue greene Knight, so rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, so passionate in loue, and so deprived of liberty, by deuout seruice to your excellent bountie: as against both dutie and nature, hee hath deceiued his Father, feigning to come ayde his Kinsman the King of Norway, where contrariwise, he hath shewed himselfe his mortall enemie. And to no other ende hath he thus offended both Father and Cozin, then to make knowne his long & laborous desires, to make you Lady and Mistresse of him and his: and such is his fear to be refused, as he endures more torments, then the martired bodye of poore Prometheus. Bee not then the cause sweete Ladie, that a Prince so famous, and a Knight so gentle, shall buy his great good seruice to your Father and Countrey, yea the most loyal loue hee beares to you, with vntimelie, vnfortunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your selfe, is it not the highest among all honours, to be Wife to such a Lord, and Empresse (in time) of renowned Allemaigne? Is it not perpetuall report, to bee Lady and commaundresse of the principall parte of Europe? Let not him beare record that a bodie so adorned, and countenaunce so milde and gracious, can entertaine tirannie or crueltie: yea Madam such crueltie, as if you receiue him not into your fauourable conceit, you shall procure the death of the truest Knight in loue, that euer liued. The blacke knight is the renowned Palmerind'Oliua, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in Fraunce the Duke of Sauoy, in maintenaunce of his Ladies beautie, fayre without compare: conforming his Sheelde and Armour, equall to his mourning thoughtes, for his absence from her that tryumphs in his Loue. The third Knight, so adorned with White-Roses, is called Ptolome, Loued by a Ladie well worthie of him. It now remaineth Fayre Princesse, that you make the Prince Trineus equall with the rest in Felicitie, for you haue the Maiden-head of his

loue

ine, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughtes. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secrete, as no creature but your selfe could haue got of mee, and the danger to fall into your misconceit, hath made mee such a blab: leauing all you haue heard to your gracious construction. Agriola, méetelie farre enough in loue before, but now vtterly denied of longer libertie, hearing the wordes of Vrbanillo, was surprised with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was driuen to silence, not able to vtter the secrete conceits of her minde, yet at length (to shadow her suddaine change from the Dwarfe) thée sayde. Ah my Friende, thou acquaintest mée with matter altogether incredible, is it possible that Trineus Sonne to the Emperor of Allemaigne, would venture into this Court, considering the mortall enmitie betweene our Fathers? Trust me my Friende I cannot credit thée. I renounce mine owne soule vnde the Dwarfe, if it be not as I haue told you: then iudge Madame what acceptaunce shoulde bee made of his seruice, when loue to you exceedeth nature: may it not bee termed true surpassing all other, eyther registred in antiquities, or present memorie? If it should bée, quoth shée, as thou sayest, it is beyonde my power to returne condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrecie, I dare assure thée, mine owne opinion of him hath so ouer-maistred me, as in honorable modestie he may commaund, and I am not so well nurtured to disagrée. But if eyther by my words thou hast gathered, or by any chaunge of countenaunce perceiued, the suddaine tiding of a flexible nature: interprete it in this good sort, that Princes affections make each other melt, as framed of one mettall, which I charge thee conceale from him, as you regarde my word and his safetie. Pardon me Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) it standeth not with my allegeaunce to obey you herein, what a villaine might I be accounted, and vnworthy the name of a faithfull seruant if I should hide these happy tydings from him, to ease those torments that euery houre threaten his death? Yea

Madame, did my maister but thinke I would so abuse him, well deserued I to be torne in peeces. Well, quoth he, if thou findest time conuenient, tell him, but no other I charge thee on thy life: and withall certifie him, that I would not for my Fathers Crowne hee should be knowne. Feare you not, good Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, they are already so well aduised, as none but your selfe can any way endanger them. It sufficeth that the Prince vnderstande your pleasure, which I will impart to him when the King is returned: so kissing her hande hee departed, leauing her highly contended, in assurance of the loyall loue of Trineus, as shee neuer determined any other Husbande, yet would she not disclose her minde, no not to Eufemia, her secret companion, thinking herselfe too much bewrayed, because the Dwarfe knew it. Soone after the Queene sent for her, to walke in the cole shadow of the Trees, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reported what pastime they had all that morning. The knightes hauing saluted the Queene and her Ladies, Trineus saluting the Princesse Agriola, was so transported as hee scant knew where he was. The Princesse likewise fixed with a stedfast eye on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly deciphering her sickneſſe, as the Prince perceyuing it, sayd to himselfe. Ah loue, hast thou wrought so happily for mee, as my Ladie knowes my secrete afflictions? shall I bee so fortunate, as she will take more on my Passions? sweete hope perswades me so, for the often change of her Diuine countenance, telles me there is some mercie in working. The King and Queene departing into theyr Pauillon, Trineus and Palmerin did the like into theyrs, the Prince taking Vrbanillo aside, demaunded if he had any good newes for him. If you will graunt me one thing (saide the Dwarfe) I will tell you such tydings, as cannot but content you. Demaunde what thou wilt (quoth Trineus) and by the Faith of a Prince, thou shalt not be denyed. Then beganne the whole discourse hee had with the

Princesse, and and what deuotion we had for the recouery of his health. Judge you in what rare humour the Prince now felt himselfe, without question he imagined himself in a more beautifull Paradise, then euer was inuented by Epicurus himselfe, and embracing the Dwarfe, he said. Ah my good Friend. what wilt thou that I giue thee? tell me what thou demaundest: thou hast my whole life so much at thy command as thou mayest liberally share out thine owne recompence, but seeing the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behinde. Why my Lorde (qd. the Dwarfe) you knowe, I was borne to doe you seruice, commaund what you please, and I will accomplish it. Then shalt thou (saide the Prince) repaire to my Mistresse againe, and kissing her Hand, present her from me this Emerald, desiring her to weare it for my sake: with remembrance to pitty his painfull miseries, whose life and death is onely in her hand. Vrbanillo taking the King, Trineus and Palmerin, went to sporte with the King, and the Princesse at their Entrance regarding Trineus, perceyued well by his countenance that hee vnderstood her Message, for that his blood was nowe risen cheerely in his Face, which before was sunck down with much languishing: So that shee imagined her selfe more happy, in being so beloued, then to Loue, and knewe not well how to dissemble her ioy. Ah poore Trineus, the paine thou hast endured, in attending the wished houres to speake with her, farre surmounteth the torments of Leander, awayting when Phœbus would goe bathe himselfe with Thetis, and the Marine Goddesses, that he might afterward swimme to his affianced Heroe: and had not shee giuen thee a better signe by her Eye to aduenture, I would haue reckoned thee more infortunate, then the betrothed Spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Now had Trineus wishfully taken the Princesse by the hand, when vnhappye one came to aduertise the King, that the Hart he had chased the day before, was now again gotten within the foyles, that if it pleased him to Hunte in the morning, hee should no doubt (kill him with little labour. These newes were so welcome

come to the King, that because hee would the next Morning more early goe to his Pastime, he withdrew himselfe for the Night, the Queene and Agriola likewise departing to their Pauillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus prolonged, and hee with Palmerin returned to their Tent, but tarrying still on the Dwarfes diligence, that he should perfect all things to his heartes desire, and to perswade him the more Palmerin thus beganne. I haue this hope my Lorde, seeing already so many good signes, that you cannot any way be deceyued in your Loue: and this I would aduise you, Fortune being so fauourable, and assisting you to her very vttermost, you should not hencefoorth shewe your selfe so Feminine, but in hardy manner reueale vnto the Princesse, when you shall finde her at conuenient leysure, both how you Loue her, and what fauourable grace you expect at her hands. I must confesse, that Letters and Messages are able to do much: but the Person being present, and knowing how to request, and how to bee answered, is more auayleable a thousand times: and in briefe, no Messenger can bee like himselfe. I speake not this, as though my Dwarfe were vnfaithfull, but to this ende, that shee might receyue no occasion of displeasure. In how many daungers haue Gentlemen beene plunged, onely by the bad construction of their Seruants message? the reydest wit that is cannot number them: therefore if you finde opportunity, attend no other suter then your selfe. This counsell well liked the Prince Trineus, wherefore hee determined to speake to her himselfe, so soone as time and leysure would permit him, and in this resolution they went to their rest: but the remembrance of Polinarda, would not suffer Palmerin to sleepe: comparing his ioy in her presence, with his tormenting Passions now in her absence, breathed forth many sighes, and shed many teares, till at length he began to slumber, wherein hee thought hee discerned this sight. Being in companie with the King, hee saw forth of a darke Caue a dreadfull Lyon, who with open throte set vppon him, and assayled him in such manner, as with his nayles and teeth hee rent

ent his Armour, and put him in very great danger of his life, o that he ſtroue in ſuch ſoꝛt in his ſléepꝛ, as Trineus being in ſed with him, awaked him, demaunding why hee ſtruggled o earneſtly. Palmerin thus awaked, deſired God to with- ſtand all his euills, and afterwards recounted to Trineus the whole effect of his Dꝛeame, and ſaid. It will not be much a- miſs my Lord, that to moꝛrow we ride Armed in the Kings ompanie, foꝛ ſuch Illuſions, albeit they commonly fall out ntrue, yet can Pꝛeſage no good to follow. I like your coun- ll well (anſwered Trineus, and Ptolome got armed as well s we. In the moꝛning they aroſe, and Armed themſelues, l ſaue theyꝛ Helmets and Launces, which theyꝛ Squyꝛes rryed, and in this ſoꝛte came to bidde the King good-moꝛ- ow: who marueiled much to ſée them ſo pꝛepared, and doub- ing they had receyued ſome occaſion of offence, demaunded hat moued them ſo to be Armed. You know my Lord (qd. almerin) that a Knight ought euermoꝛe to be ready foꝛ all oaëntures: and not knowing what inconuence oꝛ danger ay happen, beſoꝛe ſuch time as we ſhall returne againe, we ue Armed our ſelues to pꝛeuent the woꝛſt. The King not ſcontented with this anſwer, mounted on Hoꝛſebacke, and mming to the Chaſe, had excellent game at Déere, Hart, oꝛe, and wild Buffell, wherin he toke ſuch exceeding plea- ꝛe, as he determined to ſtay there fiue oꝛ ſixe dayes longer. ut in the place where he ſuppoſed himſelf ſafe, and fꝛée from l hazard, ſuddenly he was ſolicited with the changes of Foꝛ- ne, foꝛ the Quéene and her daughter Agriola were in mar- llous danger, as you ſhall reade in the diſcourſe ſollowing.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

¶ How the Queene of England and Agriola her Daughter, were in danger to be rauished by the Giant Franarco, and of the succour they had, by Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome.

THe King returning from the chase with his companie, little minding any vnfortunate euent, and conferring with Palmerin, till they drewe neere vnto their Tents: at length they heard a great tumult, and behold a Squyre making towards them, so fast as his Horse could gallop. Palmerin doubting some vnhappy chaunce, and remembring his dreame, said to the King, Neuer credit me my Lord, if this Squyre come not to you about some special affaires, as well may be gathered by his speedy pace. At these words the Gentleman came to the King, reporting how the Giant Franarco, Lord of the castle of Carbonet, since his departure came to his Tents, and frō thence had violently taken the Quéene and her Daughter Agriola, notwithstanding the resistance of many Knights, who assisting to defende her, lost theyr liues. The King with these words, stroken in wonderfull griefe, saide.

Ah Gentlemen, this villanous Traytor hath notoriously wronged vs: How is it possible to recouer them againe, before they be dishonoured? Trineus and Palmerin, mouned at these bad newes, asked the Squyre which way he went with the Quéen and her Daughter? In truth my Lord (quoth he) I cannot tell you which way hee toke, wee all were so trou-

bled and misused by his Traine: except they went along the Forrest, and so are gone to the next Village. Then Palmerin clasping on his Helmet, and snatching his Launce from his Dwarfe, galloped amayne after the Giant, not speaking a word to Trineus, who accompanyed with Ptolome, rode a-pace after him, and as they passed by the Quenes Tent, they saw the Ladyes and the Gentle-women heauily lamenting, especially Eusemia, the chiefe Companyon to the Princesse Agriola. Diuers Knights beside armed theinselues to pursue the Gyant, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the tracke of the horse, demaunding of all he met, if they saw the villaine that had stolne away the Ladyes. As concerning this Giant Franarco, you must note that he was the cruellest tyrant, and most notable Fellon in all the Realme, hauing 3 dayes Journey from the Forrest where the king hunted, a Castle so well fortified, and furnished with Munition and allthings necessarie, as in England was not the like, which was left to him by the death of his Father, who forcibly toke it from a Lorde his Neighbur, and diuers other places, especially the Isle Magdalen. There succeded hée the royall dignitie, after the death of the elder Brother, who (as you haue heard before) was slaine in the Battell by Palmerin, and hée vnderstanding the death of the king of the Isle Magdalen, was so highly displeased, that although hee had alwayes borne duetie and allegeance to the king, he now solemnly swore to reuenge his Brothers death, being so feared of the whole Countrey, that none durst enterprise to deale with him. So to reuenge the slaughter of his eldest Brother, with diuers other of his Kindred and Friendes, likewise slaine in the Battell, hee strengthened himselfe with thirtie hardie knights, intending to displease the king so much as hée could. And hearing that he was comming to London, to Feast the knights that were the cause of his great Victorie, but chiefely him that slew his brother, came with his company this way, in hope to finde them all vnprouided. And comming that Morning, the king was gone on Hunting, he found those he

desired,

desired to wéete withall, for the hatred he bare them, thinking himselfe sufficiently reuenged, if hee could carry away with him the Quéene and her Daughter: which he accomplished to his owne desire, causing them mount vppe behinde two of his knights. The Gentle-men that were left to keepe the Quéene companie, very much offended to sée such villany offered theyr Ladie and Mistresse, defended her so well as they could, but all auailed not against the Giant and his power, because they were well armed, and they with the Quéene were vnprouided, so that a number of them were slayne, and sore wounded, and more had bene, but that hee feared the returne of the king, which made him in hast ride from thence with his spoyle, sending them somewhat before, and loytering behinde himselfe, to fight with any that shuld come to reskew them. Trineus hauing gotten the sight of them, came posting to the Giant, saying: Stay trayterous thiefe, for thou mayst not so cary her away that is worthy the greatest Lord in the world. With these words they ranne fiercely togither, Trineus giuing the Giant a sore wound on the shoulder, but the Prince receiued such a mighty stroke from the Giant, as he fell from his Horse with his héeles vpward. Palmerin being not farre off, and doubting least the Prince had beene slaine, came in a great rage to Franarco, saying: Monstrous enemie to mayhood, what maketh thée so saucie to lay violent hands on Ladyes of such account? By my Sworde villaine, I shall make thée déerely to pay for thy follie. So couching theyr Launces they met together, the Gyant fayling, but Palmerin gaue him a shrewde wounde on his bodie, and theyr Horses roughly shouldring one another, as their Maisters were both thrown to the ground. Franarco (being heauy and vnwéeldie) had such a fall, as easily he could not recouer himselfe. But Palmerin nimbly getting vppe againe, gaue the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pittifully to beholde. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that Legge, set his knée to the ground, being gladde to defend the strokes of Palmerin, who reached him such a sound

blow

blowe on the Forehead, with the hilts of his Swoorde, as the Giant along on his backe, when Palmerin soone setting his foote on his Breast, with his Swoorde deuided his head from his shoulders. During this Fight, Trineus and Ptolome, made after the Queene and her Daughter, whome the Gyants Knightes droue cruelly before them. Now was it matter well worthie memorie, to see the braue behauiour of these two Knightes, but chiefly of Trineus, before his sweete Gistresse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courage, as hee thought himselfe able to conquere the whole World, and therfore sufficient for them all, were they as many more in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courage, and Louers thinke more then they are able to doe, as to Trineus perill it had now fallen out, but that a companie of the Kings Knights pursued, whereupon begaune a hote encounter betweene them, and Trineus cõming to the knight that had Agriola behinde him, set him soone beside his Horse, with his neck broken in his fall, so that the Princesse getting out of the throng, and seeing her beloued so valiant in prowesse, betweene ioy and griefe, shee said: Ah happie Knight, the Patrone of such as follow Armes, I desire thy high Fortune may proue, as thou and thy good companie may haue victorie ouer these Traytors. Now may I bee well assured of the Loue thou beares me: For which, (if we may safely escape this hard brunt) perswade thy selfe not to passe vnrecompenced. Trineus hearing the words of Agriola, was enflamed with such a spirit of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokes gaue witnesse he fought for a wife. But the Giants Knights were men of such prowesse, as the fresh supply that came were all welneere slaine, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the King and Palmerin, with fifty Knights more, came to assist them: for Palmerin hauing slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the goodliest that euer he saw, and espying the King comming with his traine, set on with them, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of

his

his side were slaine, but this seely assistance brought by the King, was the meanes that all the Gyants knights were slaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victory. The King alighting, came and embraced the Queene, saying: How happy may we thinke our selues Madam, hauing so well preuented this trecherous villanie? For neuer did I think to see you againe, but that God and these knights so highly befriended vs. The Queene and her Daughter were as yet so dismayed, in remembrance of their former daunger, as beholding so many lye slaine before them, and ioyfull beside beeing so fortunately deliuered, as betweene these extreames, they knew not what to say, but desired speedily to set forward thence, which they presently did, the King commaunding his Nephew Cerides, to see Franarco and his men burned to Ashes, and honourable Sepulture to bee prouided for the other. When the Queene hearde that Franarco was dead: Tell mee my Lord (quoth shee), who hath downe such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villain? Euen hee Madame, saide the King, that was cause of my victorie in Battell, the knight heere in blacke Armour, to whome I am so farre indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence sufficient for him: and this can I not speake without great maruell, seeing such rare Valour performed with so little daunger on his behalfe. Long may the good knight liue and prosper, saide the Queene, that hath so defended vs, and may they all thee be most happy in all their affaires, for their knightly seruice to the Realme of England. While these speeches endured, Trineus being sore wounded, was brought betweene two squyres, and set vpon his horse, but the King, the Queen, and chiefly faire Agriola was glad, when she hearde there was no such danger but hee might well escape it. Whereforе mounting all on horseback, they rode to see the Giants bodie, which made Agriola repute Palmerin for no lesse then his Dame commended him. Then the King commanded to vnarme the body, and one of his knights should bring away his Helmet and Shielde, which would be tokens sufficient for him

to

to recouer the Castle of Garbones which he seized on, and all other things belonging to the Giant, hee sent the Count of Bonneroy with fiue hundred men to confiscate and returne to his Maiesties vse. The Count well knowing such matters would not easily be accomplished, if they in the Castle should make resistance, therefore politikely hee sent the Giants Target and Helmet before, as sent from Franarco, who was with the king, and they should open the gates because they were comming thither, for witnes whereof they shewed the giants signet of armes. The guard too credulous, & thinking it impossible for any man to conquere the giant, opened the gates, whereupon the Count presently entred with his power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much as the giants yonger brother, who escaping alive from the battel, was the cause why Franarco dealt thus villanously. Thus did the Count yéeld the Castle into the kings obeysance: remaining Captaine thereof vnder the Kings authoritie, the like he did in many other places, where the people directed of the Giants rebellion, and that the Castle of Garbones was taken: there was none would resist the kings commaundement: whereof the Count was not a little glad, returning as soone as hee could with the glad tidings of his acquest to the Court, certifying the King how all things happened.

CHAP. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princesse Agriola, after he had slaine the Giant Franarco.

By this time the King was come to his Pauillion, where he caused his Chirurgions diligently to attend the two knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the prince of Allemaigne was worst of all hurt, yet the king vnderstanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loued him dearely, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recouered his health: and because hee would preuent like mischances, he caused diligent watch to be made euerie night, as though hee hadde lien in field entramped with the enemie. During the Princes sickneese, hee was oftentimes visited by the Queene and fayre Agriola, not vnthankfull of the courteste receiued by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thankes. Trineus esteeming himself worthily recompenced, seeing that heauenly spectacle, whose presence healed a greater wound then any hee had receiued in fight, desiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppressions. And while the queene thus conferred with Trineus, Palmerin came to the princesse Agriola, seeing the time so lawfull and commodious, that hee might thorowly acquaint her with matter long enough before premeditated, but because shee was desirous to talke with him, she first began in manner following. I know not sir knight, how the king my Father will satisfie the great

seruice

ſeruice you haue done him, in ſo many hazards to his Realme and himſelfe: but for mine owne part, I thinke my ſelfe ſo bounden, that after life, which hee gaue me by generation, my deuoted ſoule ſhall remaine to honour you. And if theſe occaſions paſſed do giue me iuſt cauſe to thinke my ſelfe happie, what leſſe account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your companion, who came into this Country onely for my loue, as I am perſwaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with reſpect, I ſhould accept it for more ſound aſſurance, ſo pleaſe you to ſpeake the truth herein. Madame (quoth Palmerin) if I haue done any ſeruice to the King or you, it is rewarded with much more then ſufficient, ſeeing it pleaſeth you to make ſuch account thereof, and I promiſe you, you haue two knights wholly at commaund for the loue of the third, who is ſo confidently bowed your friend and ſeruant, as no man in the world can bee more, & this is he that lieth wounded in his bed, the princely ſonne and heire of the Emperor of Allemaigne, in which report my Dwarfe hath not deceiued you. And giue my word this credit (Madame) that ſince the time hee firſt heard of your excellent beautie, beeing then in Fraunce, hee neuer had other determination, but to ſpend his life in your gracious ſeruice, and making refuſall of many faire Ladies, eſpecially of Lucemania, daughter to the moſt chriſtian king of Fraunce, ſet downe this princely and commendable reſolution, neuer to eſpouſe any other but you, ſo it may ſtand with your liking to accept him for your husband: thinke then louſedly ſweete madame, of the incomparable happines ordained for you, and ſtand not in your owne light to looſe ſo good fortune. In truth my Lord quoth the princeſſe, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of moſt hard hearted and ingratefull Ladies, if I ſhould not loue the prince Trineus, were it but for the danger he remaines in for mee, and the vnfaigned loue which you ſay hee beares mee. And thus farre I preſume my Lord on your credit, that if it were otherwiſe, you would not diſguiſe the matter to me in

this maner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which (notwithstanding) would bee to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the loue I beare him is more then hee thinks, and very far exceedeth his iudgement, as the proose hereof (in time) shall deliuer true testimonie. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully vnderstoode, in you then it consisteth to preuent the contrarie, by mercifull regarde of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly hee would enterprise (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your loue. And this will bee the meane that the conceiued pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happie coniunction of their Children. My Lord, quoth the Princesse, I will do what shall please my father and mother to command me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yeelding my honour to any preiudicial occasion. Palmerin who had no other feare but to be knowne what himselfe was, thus answered; I am perswaded madame, that your iudgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so royall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand no friuolous tearmes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, seeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you Sir Palmerin, quoth she, referre this talke to some other time, for the answer of such a high and weightie matter, deserueth to be excogitated with leysure, for oftentimes wee see, that such actions suddainely and slightly performed, causeth more repentance afterward then is expected. Yet thus farre I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were agreed, to whome God, nature and dutie hath bounde me, and to let him vnderstand my willing desire towardes him I will speake to him my selfe, as soone as the Queene is departed

parted. Not long after, the Queene returned to the King, leauing her Daughter with two of her Ladyes to comfort the prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hande, brought her to the bedde side where Trineus lay, to whome she made very curteous reuerence, & trembling with modest bashfulnesse, said. Howe fare ye gentle knight? trust mee your hard fortune doth greatly displease mee, and if I could beare part therein, beleeue me I would gladly endure the paine: for it is good reason that the causer of the harme, should haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thankes, for your good assistance without any desert. Trineus was so rauished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safetie of his life, as hee could not vtter the ioy hee conceiued: which the Princesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who answered her in this manner. It cannot be madame but my Lord Trineus will soone amend, hauing the sodaine medecine so neere him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giuing a greeuous sigh, saide. Faire madame, to accomplish that you commanded the first day I saw you, I did my indeuoure to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so sufficiently as I could wish: yet since that time I neuer enioyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when mine eyes delighted with your sweete presence, gaue hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (faire mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and countrey, regarding nothing more then this present happinesse, whereby my woundes are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all dangers sufficiently recouered, so that no griefe can euer molest me, when your gracious fauour thoroughly confirmeth all. And now might I imagine my misfortune become all other, were not this fearefull doubt left to crosse me, that scanning disdaine should be hid in such rare perfection, as oftentimes it commeth so to passe: therefore I be-

séech you Madame, may it stand with your liking to re-
solue all doubts by your direct opinion, and herein shall I
account my selfe more honoured, then were I Monarch of
the whole worlde. Loue hauing then so wounded the Prin-
cesse, as for a while she was driuen to silence, at length with-
drew the passion, and caused her returne this answer. Mas
my Lord, I was (ere this) so certaine of your affection to-
wardes mée, in respect of the dangerous trauailes endured
for my sake, as you néede not séeke any other proues, then
what mine owne heart was fully resolued on: and so I
continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate,
which I would haue you as yet dissemble, lesse crooked mis-
hap any way preuent vs. As she was procéeding in her dis-
course, the Quéene entred the Tent againe, by which occa-
sion Trineus could not say what he intended, wherefore ta-
king her secretlie by the hand, wrong her fingers with such
a crembling passion, as all the night following he lay medi-
tating on his goddesse Agriola, and the comfortable an-
swere shée gaue him. If the young Prince were in such tor-
ments, his Lady beare him companie, thinking on the spe-
ches past betwéene her and Palmerin, and this euening
the Dwarfe (not compassing before to speake with Agrio-
la) presented her with the Emeralde from the Prince, which
shée kindly receiuing, in recompence thereof sent him a faire
Diamond, rewarding the Dwarfe liberally for his paines,
who among the rest of his talke, highlie commended the
vertues of the Prince, which increased her loue so confi-
dently, as shée assured him of the Princesse loue, that
death could not change her setled affection. Trineus full
resoluing heerein, gaue such chéerefull phisicke to his heart,
and the Chirurgions such diligence to his woundes, as
within seauen or eight daies hee was able to beare armes,
whereupon the King departed thence towardes London,
where the strange knights were entertained with merua-
lous honor, the Lords, Knights, Burgesses, Officers and
other Citizens, welcomming them with great pompe and
royalti

royalties, saying. Welcome are the knights that delinered the Quéne and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Franarco, with diuers other salutations, whereat Palmerin and his fiendes were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Pallace, all the way they were still presented with rare shewes and deuises, and the knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Court to be kept for eight dayes space, for the honour of these knights, and entertainement of all friendly commers, in all which time there wanted no sports and delights as such times and occasions doe necessarily require. Now came all the Princes, Lords, and renowned knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Prouince, which yet was not the cheefest cause of his absence: but the shame hee reputed to himselfe for his foyle in Fraunce, when hee entred the Combatte for the beautie of the faire Princesse Agriola.

These knights thus worthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the king and Quéenes chambers; by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conferre with the Princesse, till this instant among all other, the Prince thus began to his Lady and Mistresse. You may easily presume sweet Madam, what secret combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the onely hope of your fauour, which as you haue promised to my especiall friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perfeuer in that gracious opinion, and what promise hee hath made of my seruice to you, thinke not but I obserue with religious care and deuotion, though not sufficient to equal your deserts yet because ingratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princesse) I returne you my Lord, as good opinions can bee imagined betwéene vs both, and accounting you for my friende, which is a higher degree, I heere discharge you of my seruice, and (mine honour guarded from blame) I shall iudge my selfe so happie to yeld

you any content, which I will fulfill, notwithstanding my daunger towardes me. But I pray you tell me my Lord, what is the intent of your loue in this action? Madame, (quoth the Prince) Syr Palmerin, who is now come to beare vs companie, shall credibly enforme you, so please you to rest contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined their talke was not about affayres of Merchandise, wherefore hée sayde to the Princesse, God speede you Madame, pardon me, I should call you Ladie, and Wife to the Prince of Allemaigne, for I doubt not but you haue chosen him for your Husband in heart. Agriola blushing and smyling hereat, made no aunswere: Wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In faith Madame if you haue done so, I would counsell you to accomplish it prestlie, and prouide to goe with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will entertaine you with such gracious fauour, as you will not lose if you beare the minde of a Princesse: beside, you shall be the meanes of euerlasting peace betweene the King your Father and his Maiestie. To which wordes, Agriola thus discreetly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day liuing, whome I would more gladly accept for my Husband, then the Prince Trineus: notwithstanding, for me to depart without the knowledge of the King or Queene my Parents, is an acte in (mine opinion) farre dissenting from duetie and honest reporte. Therefore my Lord, louing my honour as you say you do, I pray you let our behauiours be with better wisedome, least we both fall into dangers not recouerable. Palmerin perceiuing Agriola contrary to the most necessary occasion, vsed such arguments, and played so well the Orator, that the poore Princesse had no power to resist: considering the great loue shée beare the Prince Trineus, which made her yeelde more easily to his perswasions, so that shée agréed to accomplish their determination, and depart with them towards the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus ioyes now exceeded measure, and Palmerin (for)

his

ys sake,) was no lesse contented, in seipect hee should the su-
ner sie his Faire Mistresse Polinarda, whose very remem-
brance giue him life, as the Ayre doth the Camelion.

But Fortune beholding eache thing prosper as liked theyr
Fancies, would now beginne to play her Pagent, crossing
them with the vnhappyest Stratageme that euer could haue
befallen to such Noble Princes, as in the sequell shall bee
largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance,
are earnestly following theyr serious Enterprise, which was
secretly to conuey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for
which purpose they made prouision both of Shipping, & skil-
full Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessaries
aboard, at what time this Aduenture following hapned in the
Court of England.

CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assemblie,
there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King
to doe her Iustice against a Knight of his owne Court.

During the time that this Royall compa-
nie continued at London, minding no-
thing else but Pleasures, Pastimes, and
Courtly recreations, there came a Da-
mosell so faire as might be, accompanyed
with two graue Auncient Knights, and
a lusty Champyon brauely Armed, with
comely Squyres attending on him. The Damosell en-
ting the Pallace, came before the King, and vpon her Knee
began

began in this manner. Dread Lord, hauing long time [illegible] your good Justice towardes your Subiects, without any [illegible] uour or exception of persons: I am the more bolde, [illegible] he that hath iniuryed mee, is pretendedly reputed for a man [illegible] good quallity, and holdeth place of authority in your Court [illegible] humbly to craue of your Highnesse one Request, against [illegible] most false and disloyall Knight that euer was: whom [illegible] I doo but once remember, more weighty and grieuous oppres- sions fall vppon my soule, then this wretched body of mine [illegible] able to endure.

Damosell, (sayde the King) I shall right gladly [illegible] your heauinesse, if it lie in my power to doo it: therefore [illegible] mee the cause of your offence: and what hee is that hath [illegible] wronged you. Knowe you, my good Lorde (quoth she) [illegible] I loued a Knight so deerely, as contrary to the liking of [illegible] Parents and Friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe, I tooke him to my Husband, & in a good opinion of him thinking hee loued me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfait behauiour gaue demonstration, but the Tray- tour had no other meaning then falsely to beguile and deceive me: For after I had made him Lorde of mee and mine, and brought him to a Castle of mine, so strong and fayre as any in your Highnesse Dominions: the Traytour expulsed me thence violently, pretending that we were so neere allyed, [illegible] he might no longer account mee for his Wife. Since which time, notwithstanding al the humble intreaties I haue often made: he will neyther restore me my goods & Possessions [illegible] gaine, nor yet accept me as his espoused Wife. Therefore [illegible] beseech you my Lord, as becoms a good and vertuous Prince for the honour of Nobilitie, and regarde of Womanhood, [illegible] will be pleased to take pittie on a poore distressed Ladie, [illegible] that in such a rightfull demaund, you would doo mee Justice which I had sooner demaunded, but could not by the occasion of your troublesome Warres.

Ladye, sayde the King, as yet you haue not Named [illegible] man that hath offered you this surpassing iniurie. My Lord

...oth thee, this is the man in your Presence, named Myse-
...s, a vile Traytour, and publike Adulterer. And if so bee
...e dare affirme that I haue spoken any untruth, I haue here
...ught a Knight with mee, who, by Combat shall make him
...nfesse his Falshood and Treason, so please your Maiestie to
...our my Request. Myseres, (quoth the King) howe an-
...were you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Ladie
...rgeth you? Myseres beeing suddenly driuen into this
...mpe, knewe not well what to saye: yet at length, (with
...mble reuerence) he thus beganne. My soueraigne Lorde,
...credit may be giuen to the first countenance of accusations,
...ithout hearing howe the Partie accused can iustifie him-
...lfe, I doubt not but your Maiestie will presently condemne
...e: but when the matter is once well debated and discided,
...ey which seemed at the first vnreproueable, are found ma-
...ious and slaunderous persons, and the accused, Innocent
...d free from blame, as here your Highnesse shall most plain-
...y beholde.

The matter whereof this Lady detecteth mee, is forged,
...d villainously inuented: For to mee belonged the Castle
...e quarrells for, de cended from my Predecessors, to whom
...am the true, lawfull, and legitimate Inheritour. True it
...that this dissembling Woman, by sweete speeches, Femi-
...ne guiles, and secret deceyts, oftentimes practised to winne
...e for her Husbande: but knowing her behauiour such as
...seemed not a Woman of modesty and vertue, I would not
...are her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is
...e onely cause of her complainte, in hope that you, (being a-
...ue all other Princes, most benigne and honourable,) will
...strainе me to wedde her, in respect of your absolute autho-
...ie, as the dutifull obedience wherein I am bounde. When
...e Knight which came with the Ladie, had heard Myseres
...ame her in this sort, he stepped before the King, with these
...ordes.

It is great folly (my Lord) in Myseres, to denye a matter
...apparantly and well known, although if it were put to the
iudge-

indgement of honest persons, his common good report [illegible] cause him to be believed: But the poore Lady desireth [illegible] her right and Title may be cleared by Combatte, wherein [illegible] him confound her if he can, or else receyue rewarde for [illegible] notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lords, [illegible] saye and will maintaine, that Myseres is a moste [illegible] Traytour, and his owne mouth shall confesse it, or else [illegible] Day will I take his head from his bodie. Myseres [illegible] himselfe somewhat touched, grewe into great choller, and [illegible] beit the shame hee did the Ladie, deliuered him culpaple, [illegible] made him doubt the issue of the Combatte, yet as it were [illegible] maruellous rage, he answered the Knight, that hee falsely [illegible] lyed him, and was ready to make tryall therof in single Co[illegible] batte, if it pleased the Kings Maiestie to appoynt it. [illegible] I doubt not (quoth hée) to make thée paye for thy rashne[illegible] and force thée confesse thy want of discretion, in giuing [illegible] dite to the trothlesse complaints of this deceytfull Wo[illegible] Then was it ordayned, that this difference should be [illegible] ded by Armes: Whereupon the Ladyes Knight spake th[illegible] to the King. Séeing it hath pleased your Maiestie to gra[illegible] the Fielde to Myseres and mée, may it please you, (as it is [illegible] custome) to commaund that he deliuer Hostages: to the [illegible] that if hée be vanquished, the Castell may bee deliuered [illegible] your hands, for to bee surrendred in Justice where it app[illegible] taines. Good reason (saide the King) and therefore Myser[illegible] you must before you enter the Fielde, accomplish what [illegible] Knight in equitie hath demaunded.

Then Myseres called one of his Brethren, whome he[illegible] quessed to stand as his Hostage: and doubt not before [illegible] Sunne be sette, but I will discharge my selfe and my pl[illegible] With which wordes hee departed the Hall, to Arme [illegible] selfe: But because the Day was too farre spent, the ma[illegible] was deferred vntill the next Morning. The King and [illegible] Lords, séeing the Ladies Knight in such resolute assura[illegible] maruelled of whence, and what he was, for none there [illegible] him but Palmerin, who neither coulde guesse assuredly [illegible]

was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure Sheeld, which
de him remember that at the Joustes in France, the peril-
s Combate without Victorie on eyther side, was fought
twéene him and this Knight. Palmerin being glad to see
man he long looked for, and purposing now to be fully re-
nged on him: secretly went forth of the Hall, commanding
of his Squyres, to conuey his Horse and Armour the
t morning out of the Cittie, because if he vanquished Mi-
res, at his returne he intended to fight with him; or if Mi-
res had the better, yet he should not depart thence againe
th life.

Now you must vnderstand, that this young Knight which
me with the Ladie, was the Knight of the Sunne, named
soll, who euer since the Combatte performed betwéene
lmerin and him, remained with the Duke of Gaule, and
s of him highly honoured for his worthie Chiualrie. Of
hom when this distressed Ladie hearde, she made her com-
int of the wrong Myseres had done her, and Frysoll pitty-
her case, promised to ayde her in the recouery of her right:
so came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the
at griefe of the Duke of Gaule, who made Frysoll promse
n to returne againe after the Combatte: but Frysoll was
h more desirous thereof then the Duke, in respect of his
e Sister, because he was most specially beloued of her.

Thus Palmerin following his enterprise, feared to be pre-
nted, because the Field was appoynted by the King, in the
ne place wherehée intended to méete with Frysoll, and be-
e. Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained
Judges of the Fielde, which hee would not willingly haue
ken vpon him, doubting by that meane to be hindred of his
er pretended determination. Now the time being come
at the Knights shuld to the Combat, the King and the La-
s came to the Scaffoldes, and the two Judges were pla-
d in theyr Tent, accompanied with many Princes and ho-
urable Personages.

After that the Heraulds had commaunded the Champy-

ons

ons to doe theyr best deuoyre, then they clasped theyr
mets, and fetching theyr Carriere, mette with such pai
as Myseres brake his Launce on Frysolls Shields, not
uing him in his Saddle: But Frysoll driuing his La
quite through Myseres bodie, caused the false traytour t
downe dead to the earth. Then hee allighting, and ope
Myseres Helmet, and seeing no life in him, came to the
ges, saying: You may now perceyue my Lords, whether
that offered this Ladie such villany, hath receyued his du
sert, or no: So that now (I say) if there remaine yet
thing else to doo for recouering of her right, I am heere r
to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very
pleased with this Victorie, answered: Knight, you haue
enough at this time, pray that other affayres may prou
prosperous to you heereafter, and in anger went foorth of
Field, commanding the body of Miseres to be brought the
which was afterward interred with great honour.

Frysoll hauing thus vanquished Myseres, the Ladie
whome he entred the Combatte, fell on her knees before
King, desiring him to surrender the Castell which Mys
vniustly detained from her. In sooth Lady (quoth the Ki
it is reason you should haue Justice, and your owne deli
you: But know you his name that defended your quar

My Lord (quoth she) in concealing his Name, I should
fer him great wrong, concealing the Bountie and Prow
of the man, which hath not beene sparingly shewed heer
fore, in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the King
Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy va
and pollicie of this Knight, who calleth himselfe by the n
of Frysoll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him foorth of Fra
at his last Voyage, and euer since hath so deerely Loued h
as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you,
die (saide the King) you made no ill choyse of your Kni
For I haue heretofore hearde of his Actions, and am n
little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of
Court, because a King accompanied with such persons, w
nie

imagine his Countrey happpie. And in respect he is
ue a Champyon, it is impossible but that hee should bee
se and vertuous Knight: Wherefore I pray you cause
come hether to mee: which shee presently did. And ha-
saluted his Maiestie with Honourable reuerence, the
embraced him with these wordes. Worthy Syr, you
most heartily welcome: I could wish you were one of
nights, in respect that my Court should be the more ho-
ed, and I might requite your paines, better then I can
sodden.

igh and mightie Prince (qd. Frisoll) in assisting this dis-
Ladie, I haue doone but my dutie: but if I could any
doe your Highnes seruice, I knowe no Prince liuing,
whom I would more gladly employ my selfe. And at this
nt time vrgent affayres excuse me from staying heere a-
nger: Neuerthelesse, I intreate you my good Lord, (if it
stand with your fauorable liking) to repute mee among
umber of your Souldyours and Seruants. If it must
be so (saide the King) you shall doe what pleaseth you,
ll I reckon you amongst those to whome I owe conti-
ue and affection. And although the death of Myse-
ch some what grieue mee, because I made some estima-
him: yet for your sake shall I deliuer the Ladie her
, which you haue conquered with such Knightly Chy-
Frysoll humblie thanked his Maistie, and departed
the Ladie, which way they came: But Palmerin very
offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to bee
ged on him, commaunded his Dwarfe to marke well
way they went.

he Dwarfe diligently fulfilling his Maisters charge, re-
, and tolde him which way they tooke: Whereupon, he
desirous to followe, without giuing any knowledge
, to his Companyons, left Trineus to conferre with
e Mistresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secret-
neyther the Prince nor Ptolome suspected any thing.
accompanyed with the Dwarfe Vrbanillo, hee came

to

to the place where as his Squyre stayed with his Arm
where, when he was Armed, hee mounted on Horseb
thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the Cittie,
then expect my comming: As for thée Vrbanillo, thou
say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon mee, th
I did not acquaint him with the vrgent occasion of my
ture: which I was more enforced to do then he thinks
Neuerthelesse, pray him take no paines to enquyre after
because I doubt not to returne very shortly, although
soone as hée would: yet pray him to vse so little speech th
of as may bée. The like mayest thou say to Ptolome, an
them both commende mée most heartily: With this
charge to you both, that vppon the paine of your lives,
ther of you do follow me, nor cause any other to make
after me.

So taking his Launce, hee galloped that way which
Dwarfe shewed him they were gone, and then hée with
Squyre returned to the Cittie, making very sorrowful
mentation, because they thought theyr Maister would
turne no more, in that he would not be knowne whither
went, yet would they not bewray nothing theyr Maister
forbidden them. Trineus and Ptolome were mature
sorrowfull, especially the Prince, who without the Dw
assurance of his Maisters short returne, had followed to
fecke him: yet not throughly contented with Vrbani
perswasions, the King himselfe came to comfort him
You must thinke (good Syr,) that your noble Friend is
about some strange Aduenture. For you know he ne
terprised any thing, but it returned him to honour. If he
fore for the Loue of his Ladie, hee shewed himselfe with
his Péere in Chiualry, thinke you hee will not regarde his
putation, and premeditate his Actions before hee runne
farre in daunger? Content your selfe I pray you, for if
returne be not the sooner, I will cause such prouision to
made, as hée shall be found againe. The Princesse Ag
likewise intreated him not to bee disquietted at the ab

of Palmerin, for with the helpe of God and his friends, quoth she, his returne will cause as much ioy, as his departure doth greefe. All this could hardly content Trineus, for hee dreamed in his sleepe, that the Knight which slue Myseres, was he against whom Palmerin entred the combat in France at what time they could not ouercome each other. And remembring what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for this cause he followed him, which imagination somewhat comforted him, and he reputed the Knight wise if hee medled any more with Palmerin.

CHAP. LIIII.

How after the death of Myseres, Palmerin followed Frysol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosell intreated his life.

ALL that day Palmerin trauelled, and most part of the next, yet could hee heare no tidings of the Lady and Frysol, which made him ride in great melancholly, till at length meeting with a Damosell, mounted on a goodly Palfray very richly harnessed, of whome hee demaunded, if hee mette not a Knight Armed, who bare in a Shielde of Azure a Golden Sunne, and with him a Ladie attended on by many Squires. Truelie Sir, quoth the Damosell, if you will grant me two requests that I shall demaunde, I will bring you to him you seeke for, before to morrow the third houre of the day. Palmerin who was wonderfull desirous to finde out his enemie, granted to any

thing shée would desire: on condition (quoth hée) that you shewe mee the Knight. Followe me then sayde the Damosell, for I will accomplish that I haue promised. So rode they together, and among other speeches, Palmerin asked her if shée knewe the Knight, and what his name was: The Damosell aunswered, that shée knewe not the Knight, but shée was very well acquainted with the Ladie in his companie, and this night (quoth shée) they minde to lodge at a Castle of mine Auntes. In the Euening they arriued within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entred a little thicket, for feare of being seene, and the Damosell hauing a flagon of Wine, and a Pastie of redde Déere in a Paunde at her saddle bow, Palmerin and shée refreshed themselues therewithall: but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sléepe, watching the Castle Gate, least in the time of his sléeping his enemie should escape him. The next morning, so soone as the breake of day appeared, Frysol came forth of the Castle with his company, wherefore Palmerin not a little gladde, sayd to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your promise performed, for this is the Knight, I séeke: if therefore you will any thing with me, I must intreate you to follow mee, for I would bee verie loath that hee should escape me.

With which wordes he mounted on horsebacke, galloping after Frysol so fast as the Horse coulde away, and ouertaking him, sayde. Stay awhile Sir Knight, thinke you to passe away in such sort? haue you forgot your words at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Sauoyes Tent? now is the time I hope to correct your presumption, when thou shalt well perceiue, that thou neyther deseruest to be Seruant to the Princesse Polinarda, nor art worthie to talke of her honourable name. Frysol thus staying knew by Palmerins words, that it was hee against whom he fought the Combate in France, whereupon hee aunswered.

Truly

Truely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then sayd, nor is the beauty of Polinarda, nor my loue to her so little, that my desire to her seruice should not bee now remembered, nor will I forbeare to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoeuer. And if thou hast sought mee forth in this quarrell, thou hast found mee so ready to defend it: as I will more willingly chose to die, then deny any part of my dutie to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin being so angrie, as he would not multiplie any more words, but encountred his enemie so valiantly, as they brake their Launces, and yet could not vnhorse each other, then drawing their swords, they laide so cruelly vppon their bodies, as their shieldes being broken, their Helmets battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so grieuously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likeliest to winne the victorie. Til at length Frysols Horse saying vnder him, fell to the grounde, and hee so weakened with his great losse of bloud, as hee coulde not recouer himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shoulders with his sword, which when the Ladie sawe, for whom Frysol had slaine Myseres, shee fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her louely tresses of haire, but with very great impatience renting them violently, made the ayre to ecchо her lamentable complaints. Which the Damosell seeing that guyded Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her exceeding griefes: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to giue ouer the fight. But he, fayning that he heard her not, because Frysol with rough struggling had got on fote againe: charged him with such violents strokes, as Frysol (being of inuincible courage) requited him with as worthie chiualrie.

Againe the Damosell came on her knees to him, intreating him to giue ouer the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer

Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall acquite you of part of the promise which you made mee. Palmerin chafing like a furious Lyon, answered. I pray you Damosell aske some other thing, for in this matter, of force you must pardon mee. In sooth saide the Damosell, if you denie mee my demaunde, I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you periured, for ill it becomes such a Knight as you are, to make promise to a Lady and not obserue it. By God Lady, said Palmerin, you doe mee great wrong, in with-holding mee from reuenge on him, whom aboue all menne in the world, I hate most deadlie, vnhappie was the houre wherein I mette you: and so mounting vppe on horsebacke, he galloped away in verie great anger. When the other sorrowfull Lady sawe that Palmerin was gone, and had left her Knight, with great ioy she embraced the Damosell that had procured it, thanking her for shielding the life of a most noble Knight, for which courtesie she remained bound to her during life.

What I haue done, (quoth the Damosell) is for the loue of you and this Knight, sweating to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman, that I haue another thing to aske of the Knight which is gone, that concerneth me verie neerlie. Notwithstanding, your teares moued mee with such compassion, that I stand in daunger to lose what I shall neuer recouer, yet in respect the cause was so honest and vertuous, I doe not repent what I haue done: but because he remaineth indebted to mee for another request, I must needes leaue you and follow him, so mounting vpon her Palfraye, shee rode after Palmerin with all the haste shee possibly could make. And in her iourney wee will leaue her, returning to Frysol, whose woundes being very dangerous, the Lady bounde them vppe so well as shee could, till they came at their next Lodging, where by good Fortune was a Lady so well seene in Chirurgerie, as in short time shee cured his woundes whole and sounde. Frysol so

well

well recouered, departed thence with the Ladie, because the thirde day following they should bee at the Castle, whither alreadie was come Hermes, one of the King of Englands Knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliuer the Ladie her right: which Hermes did according to his charge, entertained the Ladie honourably, deliuered her the keyes of the Castle, and commaunded all the Subiects to reuence the Ladie, which they refused not to doe, but were glad of her comming. For ioy hereof, were very solemne feasts prepared, and the Lady recounted to Hermes, Commissioner to the King, how Frysol fought the Combate by the way, against the Knight of the blacke armour: whereby Hermes presently knew, that it was the strange Knight, who had left the Court, vnknowne to his Companions, or any of his Friendes, whereof hee was not a little glad, because hee iudged that these newes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so sone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Ladie quietly in her Castle, hee departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, trauayling the way was assigned him by the Ladie.

Frysol stayed there with the Ladie till hee had perfectly recouered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Horse, because his owne was slaine, and a new Armour, his owne being spoyled, hee returned to the Duke of Gaule, who reioyced greatly to haue his companie. But when the Duke vnderstood how discourteously he had beene vsed by the blacke Knight, who was so highly fauoured in the English Court, hee deuised by all the meanes possible to bee reuenged on him: so that being in a Castle on the Frontiers of his Duchie, yet within the King of Englandes Dominion, hee vnderstood the blacke Knight should passe that way, because hee could not else returne to the Court. Now perswading him else for resolute vengeaunce, hee pitched his Tents in a fayre Medow neare a Bridge, and there placed twelue Knights,

the moſt hardie and valiant men in all his Dukedome, who ſhould maintaine this order: that no Knight ſhould paſſe ouer the Bridge, vnleſſe hee entred Combate with thoſe twelue Knightes one after another, and ſuch as were vanquiſhed, ſhould ſubmit themſelues to the Dukes mercie, either for their deliuerance, or to remaine his priſoners, and the horſe of the partie foyled, ſhould belong to the conquerour, but if they were diſmounted, the paſſenger ſhould goe on his iourney, and take their Horſes with him. This aduenture thus eſtabliſhed, many good Knights were ouercome, becauſe it was a verie harde matter to vanquiſh twelue Knights, and eſcape: But the Duke toke no little pleaſure herein, who detained Fryſol more by conſtraint then otherwiſe, for his anger ſo vehemently encreaſed againſt Palmerin, as no delight or pleaſure could expiate his reuenging deſires.

CHAP. LIII.

How Palmerin went with the Damoſel to accompliſh the promiſe he made her, and what befell him.

PAlmerin (as you haue heard) departed from the Damoſell in a rage, becauſe he could not execute what hee intended, wherefore hee deuiſed to deale ſomeother way, and to ſingle forth Fryſol in ſuch conuenient place, as one of them ſhould die before they departed. And as he was imagining ſome other way to ouertake Fryſol, the Damoſell had now againe recoued his company, ſaying. I pray you Sir Knight, conceiue no il opinion of me, for hinde-

ring

ning you from killing your enemie, whom youe haue left in verie great ieopardie, considering what bountie and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will bee sorrie for. Wherfore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what you haue promised, which if you will doe, you must go with me.

Beleeue me Damosell, saide Palmerin, you shewed but little courtesie, so often hindering me from the thing which aboue all other in this worlde most tormenteth mee. What vnhappie bodie are you? but more vnhappie the houre I mette with you: but seeing it is reason I should keepe my promise, leade the way, and I will not faile to follow you. So rode they on, and for foure dayes space hee would not speake one word to her, and faine hee would haue left her company, but that he could not with honor forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a Riuers side, Palmerin espied a Knight standing with a Bow and arrow in his hand, which hee let flie at his Horse and killed him. Palmerin impatient by remembrance of Frysol, and angrie that the Knight had thus killed his Horse, made towardes him so fast as hee coulde, but the Knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin vp to the middle in water before he was ware of it, and now he could neither see the Knight that slew his Horse, nor the Damosell that came in his companie. Palmerin being in great perplexitie, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and feeling hee was vpon a Bridge, behelde a marualous deepe streame running vnder it, and at the end thereof a goodly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary aduenture, he espied a knight on the battlements of the Castle, who saide. Stay a while Sir Knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate.

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defende himselfe if any came to assaulte him, so the Castle Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawne, yet was there no man that displeased him, but euery one made

him humble reuerence, with verie good wordes and gentle countenance, declaring by their behauiour, that hee was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towardes him a Ladie, accompanyed with many Damosels, and Knights, also shewing cheerefull gestures, and the Ladie taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd.

Ah, gentle Knight, right welcome are you to this place, and heauen bee praysed for the good it doth mee, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could bee able to finish: enter hardily in good assurance, for you will wee make all the honour that we are able. Palmerin beleeuing the Ladie, was brought into a marueilous goodly Chamber, where certaine Squires holpe to vnarme him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrappe about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the table was couered, the Ladie entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court hee could not be better. The feast ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Lady began to deuise with Palmerin, saying. Long time (my Lord) haue we desired your comming, as the man in whom our only helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are perswaded to be delinered from the misery wherein I and mine haue too long time bene detained.

I beseech you Madame, quoth Palmerin, to tell me your affayres, as also what the Knight meane to kill my Vncle, and why you entertaine mee with so great kindnesse. If you will promise me, said the Lady, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I thinke is destinied to you: I will reueale you, otherwise, I shall but lose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) and that a knight may compass, spare not to tell mee, for I will do my indeauour therein. Gramercies gentle Knight sayd the Lady, the circumstance of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle (my Lord) sometime belonged to my noble Father, a Knight so hardie and valiant as any in these parts, in whose yonger yeares

loue

Loue so ouer-ruled him, as hee affected a Lady of no lesse qualitie and condition then himselfe, by whome he had a Daughter: at whose byrth hir Lady and Wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of a very Honourable and ancient discent, by whome hee had mée the first Childe. My Sister at fourteene yéeres of Age, my Father oftentimes would haue richly Marryed her to her great aduancement, whereto she being unwilling, by my Fathers consent, shee remained with her Mothers Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by whose counsell my Sister caused a goodly Pallace to be edified, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterward they made their continuall abiding.

During this time my good Father louing me dérely, so as he matched mée with a wealthy and Noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chiefly in Chiualrie, by whome I had a Daughter a yéere after our Espousal: but the more my griefe, my good Husband and Father both dyed, within short space after my Childes byrth. Now my Daughter beeing come to the yéeres of Marryage, her Beautie made her desired of many noble Lords: but because I still reputed her too young, I denyed all her Suters, which afterward turned to my very great detriment. For my Sisters Aunte had a Sonne, the most mis-shapen, deformed, and worste conditioned Knight, as all the Countrey could not shew such another, yet became he so amorous of my faire Daughter, as hee requested his Mother to demaund her of mée for his Wife: but when I heard thereof, you may well perswade your selfe that neuer Woman disliked any thing more, and yet to this time do as much as I then did: So that I made her answere, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because hee was altogether vnworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharpe repulse, hee continued his Amorous desires to my Daughter, so that hee earnestly perswaded his Mother to permitte him to take her away from mée perforce: to which suite the vndiscreet Mother con-

consented, either moued with pittie, or ouercome by the importunate soliciting of her, so that one day (vnder colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my daughter. This wicked traitor had long before that time intended this trechery, compacting the matter secretly with villaines and theeues, by whose assistãce he carryed away my Daughter, shutting her vp in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to reskew her, considering how well I was beloued of my neighbours, he preuented me by a strange enchantment, enuironing the Castle and the Tower with such a marualous water, as no knight should enter vpon them without their consent.

Now that themselues might come forth and return again at their pleasure, they deuised a litle Boate, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whome they list. Since this vnhappie time did I neuer see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all grieues mee) immediatly violated and rauished at his pleasure, sweating nowe neuer to take her as his Wife, but to vse her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traytour in despight of mee, and to reuenge the wordes I gaue him, doth monstreously abuse her, and most (vnmanly,) whippeth her daily with Roddes, which my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no meanes will be perswaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recouer her againe, haue euer since continued in earnest Inuocation to Heauen, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villain: and such fauour haue I found in my deuout Imprecations, as first of all, his owne Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonyes Fyre in one of her Legges, which is so grieuously tormenting her, as no remedie can be found to asswage the veration. Her Sonne vnderstanding hereof, would haue slaine my Sister, accusing her to procure his mothers infirmitie by her Learned knowledge: Whereupon my

my Syster fearing her life, and watching time conuenient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain hither to me, being sorry that her Aunt should thus iniuriously deale with me, and promised to worke the meane that I should recouer my Daughter. These good words not a little pleasing mee, I would néedes know how I should come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortunes had beene so vnkesome to me, whereto she thus answered.

It is so god Syster, that I cannot now reuerse the forcible Enchauntments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I would) if it laye in my power, wherefore you must attende the comming of a Knight, who exceedeth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Prowesse: for he shall passe the Water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliuer my Niece your Daughter againe into your custodie. As concerning the Knight: god Syster, that shall so valiauntly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my former Enchauntment: For him will I leaue with you an excellent good Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with diuers other gifts to bestowe on him, because my selfe shall not liue to see him, which came to passe, for very shortly after my Syster dyed. Now knowe you Syr Knight, what is prepardained for you, therfore take some pittie on mee a poore desolate distressed Mother, and boldely Aduenture your selfe in this honourable cause, as bounden hereonto by Vertue and necessitie occasion.

Beliue me Madame (saide Palmerin) your discourse hath some straunge, and god reason moueth you to requeste vengeaunce, because your wrongs are the greatest that euer I heard of, which may in some sorte perswade you, that the offender cannot long escape, without shame answerable to his cursed Villany, for Heauen will not suffer it, by assistance whereof I hope to reuenge your Daughters Rape. And trust me deare Ladie, I am sorry I came not in your Systers life time, because shee could haue resolued mee in a doubtfull matter: Yet nevertheless, I will do so much for you, as if

the

thee were liuing. But I much marueil what is become
the Knight that slewe my Horse, and the Damosell that co
ducted mee hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Lad
shee shall come anone to attend vppon you: but the Knig
was onely a matter of Enchauntment, deuised by my S
ster, to discouer the man that shoulde finish this Aduentu
And the Damosell whereof you speake hath brought hith
many Knightes to this Lake, but when they Horses we
slaine, none of them durst bee so hardie as once to enter t
Water, but onely you, being Predestinated to this Aduen
ture. In this and such like talke they spent the day till Su
per time, and afterwardes was Palmerin conducted to
Chamber, and being layde in Bedde hee could take no re
First, for griefe that hee had not slayne Frysoll, and the
gaine, by the strange tale the Ladie tolde him: Wherei
rising the sooner in the Morning, hee went with the Lady t
heare diuine Seruice in her Chappell, where hee desired
God that he might preuaile against these Conjurations, a
vanquish the Knight that hadde so much abased his Order.

Returning from the Chappell, the Ladie among oth
talke thus saide: I see by Knight that your Armour is br
ken and much defaced, that one may iudge you haue not ha
it yole in your Armorie, wherefore I thinke you met not wi
your Friend, when you were enforced to so dangerous tryal
But as I vnderstand by the Damosell that was your gui
hither, you returned him sound payment for his paines. I
supply your want, I will bestowe an Armour on you, whi
my Sister long since prouided for you, and with carefull re
gard kept close in her Chest: therefore let mee intreate yo
not to refuse it, in respect it was not prouided but for speci
purpose: being needefull for the present occasion you ma
now in Enterprise. Palmerin would not refuse her courteo
offer, wherefore opening the Chest, there lay the Armour, co
uered with white Taffata, whereon was written in Lette
of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for th
good Kni: Palmerin d'Oliua, sonne to the most royal Kin
tha

at at this Day liueth in all Greece. That worthie present
eatly delighthd Palmerin, because heerein his desire was
newhat satisfyed, which was to knowe the estate of his
ther: Wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour hee
e, to his Ladie, I perceyue fayre Madame, that your Sy-
r knewe more of my Destinie then any other: For seeing
could so truely describe my name, I neede make no great
bt of her further Judgement. So taking away the silke,
elde there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which
ing Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreatie of
autifull Thetis, beeing most curiously chased ouer with
wers of Golde, and the Shielde of Steele, all engrauen
h rare Deuises, such as well might beseeme the greatest
nce in the World, Palmerin presently put off his owne
mour, and inuested himselfe with the Ladyes gift, which
ell agreed with him in euery poynt, as the like could hard-
e framed for his bodie.

When hee was thus Armed, he desired the Ladie to shew
the way, that might conduct him to the place where hee
ld discharge his promise, for that hee would delay no fur-
time in a matter of such weight. The Lady comman-
hree of her Squyres to conduct him, who ledde him along
rrow Path-may, which brought him to the Enchaunted
ter, so deepe and daungerous, and there they shewed him
Boate to passe ouer in, which was fastened with a great
yne to a Tree, whereupon Palmerin sought the meanes
ndo it: But so soone as he layde hand on the chayne, to
he it towardes him, there rushed presently forth of the
haunted Water two mightie Lyons, who violently as-
d Palmerin in such forcible maner, as they got him down
ground vnder them, yet he recouered himselfe quickly,
valiantly encountred those hydeous Monsters, who had
a Diuellish Charme on them, as that no Sword could
way hurte or wound them. Palmerin perceyuing that
is valour was in vayne, called to Heauen for help, in this
t necessitie, and commending his abilitie to the Highest

pro-

Protection, and his heart to the gracious regarde of his Mystresse: Hee gaue one of the Lyons such a cruell stroke betwæne the Eyes, as hee tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwardes seene no more, and soone after him hee sent his other fellow for companie: But hadde not his Armour bene of extraordinarie Vertue, doubtlesse this should haue bene his last Aduenture.

Not a little ioyfull of this happy Victorie, hee entred the Boate, and with one of the Oares he beganne to Rowe, but nowe was he surprized with a wonderfull daunger, for the Water arose in huge Billowes, beating and tossing the Boate so fearfully, as he had very much a doo to saue and keep the bottome from turuing vpside downe. In this perplexitie, which hee could not deuise how to mittigate, a matter of greater misfortune yet befell him, for suddenly a marueilous great, huge, and ouglie Monster started out of the Water, which laboured by al the meanes he could to ouerwhelme the Boate. So that now was hee constrayned to forgoe his Oare, and drawe his weapon to resist this Monster, which terrified him so cruelly on the one side, and the Waters so dangerously on the other, as he was not in the like hazarde when he fought with the Serpent on the Mouncaine Artifæria.

To comfort him in this contagious extreamitie, he implored his Diuine assistaunce, whose onely prouidence must now defende him, else had the raging and distempered Water, or the rauenons Monster that gaped for his life, deuoured him. But he that in greatest perrilles, was euer of vndaunted spirite, made such harde shifte to rowe with his Sworde, as in despight of the Monster, and the hurling waues of the Water, hee landed on the other side when immediatly all the coniuration ceassed, so that neither Water, Monster, Boate, or any thing else might then bee discerned. I leaue you to imagine, whether Palmerin were gladde or no, that he had so happilie escaped this danger: for ioye whereat he fell vpon his knees, and with he

ed hands and eyes to Heauen, gaue thankes vnto the High-
eſt, for his deliuerance. His prayer being ended, he went to
the Caſtle, where he heard a moſt grieuous and doleſull com-
plainte of a Lady, ſaying:

Vnhappy be the houre of my Natiuitie; Alas, is it poſ-
ſible that in all the whole Worlde, any Ladie may compare
with my miſeries? Palmerin attentiuely marking theſe
ſpeeches, knewe well it was the Impriſoned Ladie: where-
vpon moued with compaſſion, hee called with alowde voyce for one
to come open the Gate, and ſo long hee called, that at laſt the
Knight hearde him, who looking forth at a windowe of the
Forteresſe, ſaide: In an euill houre (Knight) commeſt thou
hither, and I much maruell what fooliſh preſumption hath
guided thee to this place, ſeeing thou canſt no way eſcape my
hands: but in my courteſie it remaines, eyther to ſpare thee,
or put thee to a moſt cruell Death, although my Enchaunt-
ment hath hitherto ſuffered thy Paſſage: Thou art mar-
uellous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Windowe, but if
thy courage bee ſuch, as to deale with mee hand to hand, I
will make thee vnderſtande, that thy loftie woordes cannot
driue thee from my Swoorde: For I will pull downe that
pinnacke, and reward thy inexorable Tyrannie, to that good
Ladie I hearde complaine, whome like a Villaine thou to-
reſt from her Mother. Come downe I pray thee (if thou be
not afraide) and thou ſhalt ſee what entertainment I giue to
ſuch as thou art.

Are you Syr (quoth the Knight) ſuch a corrector and re-
former of Vices? Dareſt thou but tarry til I come downe,
I ſhall teache thee the way to be better aduiſed. So Arming
himſelfe preſently, hee mounted on Horſebacke, and came
forth at the Caſtle Gate: Whereupon Palmerin thus ſpake
vnto him. There is ouer great odds, Syr Knight, you to be on
horſebacke, and I on foote, you ſhall ſhewe ſmall knighthoode
in offering me ſuch wrong: I pray thee (of courteſie to alight)
otherwiſe I ſhall beſtowe ſuch a currying on your Palfraye,
as your Seruaunt afterwardes ſhall take but ſmall paynes

with

with him. The Knight of the Castell made as though he heard him not, and ranne fiercely with his Launce against Palmerin, who escaped his Enemie, with his Sworde gaue his Horse such a stroke on the legge, as hee past by him, the Bone being cut in twaine, hee fell to the ground, hauing one of the Knightes legges so fast vnder him, as hee was vnable to recouer himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him againe, gaue him halfe a douzaine such raps about the Pate as he lay quiet enough, without any mouing: Whereupon he vnclasped his Helmet, when the Knight hauing some time begunne to grapple with him, and drawing his Pocket-dagger, gaue Palmerin a shrewd Wound therewith in the Thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke hee tooke his head from off his shoulders. The Squyres and Seruants that belonged to the Castell, who came forth to see the end of the Fight, ranne apace backe to the Castle againe, to shut the Gates for their owne safety: But Palmerin (albeit he was hurt, preuented them, laying about him so roughly on euery side, as hee swore, that if they would not bring him the Imprisoned Lady, they should all presently dye the death. Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch, others on their knées asked for mercie, promising to do whatsoeuer he commaunded them: whereupon hee said to him that had the keyes. Arise quickly Villaine, and conduct me to the Prison, or I shall paye thée for thy lazinesse. The poore fellow almost frighted out of his wittes, brought him directly to the Tower where the Ladie was, whome they found naked from the middle vpwards, and so grieuously beaten, as all her Bodie was goreblood, which the Knight had done that morning, for a Dreame he had the Night before, howe her Father would sende a Knight thao should take her thence perforce, and murther him, in which opinion he came to the Ladie, saying. I perceyue that thy Mother and Friends labour to get thée from mée, and practise my destruction by all the meanes they may: but now for their sakes thou shalt dearely abye their dealing. And with these wordes the Villaine

cruelly whipped her, as shee was ready to giue vppe the ghoste, and so left her in hope she would haue dyed. Palmerin finding the Ladie in this lamentable plight, sayde. Cease good Ladie and leaue your sorrowfull acclamations, for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolution for his deserts, as he hath left his heade in signe of his penaunce: and if you will depart with me towardes your Mother, I will shew you the Traytour where hee is now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, (quoth the Ladie) is the Trayterous Scloto deade, that so monstrously wronged me? He is Ladie, sayde Palmerin, you neede feare him no more. Then Heauen be praysed (quoth she) for this happy daye, and among all Knightes be you the renowned, for euer, with which wordes shee arose, and wrapping a furred Mantle about her, without any other garments on her body, shee went with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scloto laye slaine, lifting vppe eyes, and hands to Heauen, she sayde. O my God, how is thy name to be praysed, so iustly punishing the trecherie and disloyaltye of this villayne: Ah Traytor, how worthily hast thou receyued this death, which is not rygorous, as thy cruelle tyranny hath bene to me.

Heere you must note, that so soone as the Knight was dead, all the enchauntments about the Castle were presently finished, the great Lake beeing consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother aduertised thereof, came to meete Palmerin: embracing her daughter with such exceeding ioye, as they could not speake to one other they, teares so hindered them, at length the Ladie kneeled before Palmerin with these wordes. Ah worthy Knight, how happye haue you this day made me? all my former greefes (by your meanes) beeing now conuerted into singular contentation. As she would haue proceeded in her gratulations, she perceiued the bloude to distile downe Palmerins Armour: which shee sorrowing beholde, sayde. Methinkes Syr Knight you are very

sore wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repose your selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to use such diligent care, as you shall be whole and sound in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and being unarmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Lady dressed his wounds, and he was so well entertained as heart could devise. Then were the Ladies Squires and Seruants to Scloros Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they burned the Traitors body, and putting his head on the poynt of a Lance, they placed it on the top of the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all parts of the Iland, to see the Knight that ended the enchauntment: and among other, the Damosell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knee thus spake to him. Now am I satisfied Sir Knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was onely for the deliuerance of this Lady whom you haue valiantly conquered from the tyrant that tormented her. I beseech him, who euermore hath regard to the poore afflicted, that his pleasure may be to send you shortly a better aduenture, whereby you may accomplish all your hautie enterprises. So will he I doubt not, said Palmerin, and that was one from which you dissuaded me: but I shall neuer be merry till I find him againe, though then at my intreaty he escaped my hands so well. And Fortune speed the matter so happily, quoth the Damosell, as Peace and Friendship may be united betweene you: for if either of you miscarry, it were great pitte, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what will, sayd Palmerin, neuer shal other agreement be betweene us. With these words the Damosell held her peace, for she perceiued by his answere, that he was not halfe pleased with the other Knight.

CHAP

CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin trauailing through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfe enter into a Caue, whom hee followed, and found there a knight, with whom he had much conference.

SO long continued Palmerin in the castle with the Ladie, till his woundes being healed, and he able to beare Armour, hee sayd to the Lady, Madame, by the helpe of God and your diligent endeauour, I find my selfe in good constitution of body wherefore with your fauourable licence, I meane to morrow to depart hence, because occasions of great importance so commandeth me: yet this assurance will I leaue with you, that in any place where I shall come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power ouer mee, as at all times I remaine to doe you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankefull for her benefit receiued, returned him many thankefull gratulations: but seeing they could no longer detaine him, for his speeches were such as he would needs be gone, she said:

Gentle knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sojourne here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I would gladly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painefull trauailes, but onely that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

Then toke shee out of a Coffer two rich and precious Ringes, and presenting him one of them, she sayde. You shall giue this Ring to her whome aboue all other you most esteeme, the Ring containing this speciall vertue, that the longer shee weares it, the more shee shall loue you, and day by day shall her loue so vehemently encrease, as all aduersities and troubles, shee shall beare with patience, that by meanes of your loue maie any way endaunger her.

This other Ring is of a contrary vertue, which you must giue to the Ladie your deere Frende beloued, and to him may you safelie say, that any occasion whatsoeuer, cannot plucke it from this Ladies finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Ladie which weares it, shall not bee disparaged, and neither intreaties, giftes, or whatsoeuer besides, cannot compell her, to doe any thing contrary to her liking. If it come so to passe that she were beloued by any other, then him shee now affecteth, shee shall bee able by vertue of this Ring, to quench all such libidinous desire in her sollicitour, and cause him neuer afterwarde to moone her with any dishonest request. As for these stones of so rare and excellent qualitie, you must note that they were precisely chosen for you by my Sister, and placed as you see them, by her perficiall knowledge in the Magicall Sciences, that in time to come they shall doe such seruice, as no Jewels (of what value soeuer they were) might bee able to doe the like.

Besides these, shee gaue him diuers other Jewels to carry to his Lady, for which hee himbly thanked her, and taking his leaue of her and her Daughter, who shedde many teares for his departure, hee mounted vpon his horse backe, and trauailing thorow a great Forrest, hee espyed a Dwarfe, whom hee iudging for to bee his Seruant Vrbanillo, because hee waas of his stature, and very much resembled him, he called aloude, Heare a thou tall fellow,

how

how camest thou in this place, so vnfrequented and vnhabited? The Dwarfe being in a great feare, ranne so fast as he could into a great Caue betweene two Bushes, which made Palmerin alight and follow him, and very farre went he into the Caue not seeing any body, till at length he came into a little Roome, as it had bene cut out of a Quarrie, which had light into it by a little chinke cut through a Rocke: and there hee fonnd a young Knight layde vppon a bedde, at whose feete lay the Dwarfe, all quaking and trembling with his late feare, whom Palmerin now saw that hee was not Vrbanillo, wherefore hee saluted the Knight, saying:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because I entered so boldly, neither knocking first, or calling for any of your Seruants: Albeit I desired to speake with this little man, but nothing could induce him to tarry my coming, for he fled from me as I had bene a Diuell. Whereupon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here more courteous, I followed him at the harde heeles, with no other intent, but onely to know how I might possible get forth of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misaduenture I haue lost my way, for I would not willingly stray too farre, least I should bee forced to remaine here as an holy Hermite, considering my profession is cleane contrary. To preuent such chance, I thinke it was Gods will I should follow your Seruant, let mee therefore intreate you, to know what you are, and wherefore you liue here so solitary, shunning as it seemeth the company of men: protesting vnto you, that if I may in ought assist you, whereby to draw you from this obscure life, I will with all my heart accomplish it, though it were matter that should concerne my life.

The Knight raysing vppe himselfe, and sighing so bitterly as life and soule would haue parted in sunder, answered. Alas noble Knight, seeke not to vnderstand

the depth of my sorrow, in respect the remedy is all to-gether impossible: yet in that your demaund proceedeth from such a gentle Spirite, as pitieth the miseries of vn-spised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Know then gentle Knight, that I am the most forlorne Varnan, whose vnfortunate life exceedeth all mens whatsoe-uer, for this world affordeth me nothing but mishappe, di-grace, contempt, and all tormenting griefes, as for delight and pleasure, they are lothsome to me, my Moneths, Weeks, Daies, Houres and Minutes, being continually accompa-nyed with all exceeame passions. My greatest ease consi-steth in dolorous Lamentations, remembrance of paste infortunes, sad Regrets, and insupportable Melancholy. In briefe, I am onely he, whose companions are, a troubled spi-rit, thoughts confounded with frustrate hope, having vtter-lost the light of those gladsome Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despised, yet welcome to me that am so disdained.

These wordes were vttered with so many sighes, such flouds of teares, and hailing his flesh with such im-patience, as would haue relented euen a heart of Adamant, which moued Palmerin by gentle perswasions, to re-quest of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long he con-tinued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus aunswered. Gentle Syr, so well contented me the sorrowes which I suffer, that in hope of any re-medie, I would not bewray them: but sithing Fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in respect of your gra-cious and affable nature, as also that you shall not repute my vndiscrete and misgouerned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadnesse.

True it is, Syr Knight, that I haue hitherto, and e-uer shall, Loue a Ladie, Daughter to a Knight my neigh-bour

bour, the being (in my iudgement) one of the faireſt Ladies in the whole world. And now perceiuing by her behauiour that ſhe loued me as well, or rather more, which indeed ſhe did not: for her I accomplished all things that a Knight could for his Ladie, aduenturing mine honour, and my life in all dangers for her ſake, yea, nothing might be refuſed for the diuine Miſtreſſe of my thoughts. Perceiuing my ſelfe to be ſo equally loued, and my paſſions to grow beyond my abilitie, finding occaſion to acquaint her with the ſecrets of my heart, I deſired her to pittie my oppreſſions, which if ſhe refuſed to doe, ſhee would loſe her louer, and his life withall. For I was ſo ſolemnely vowed to her ſeruice, as ſhe could not commaund any thing ſo hard and dangerous, but by her fauourable regarde would bee moſt eaſie to mée. Theſe wordes could draw no pittie from her, but diſpleaſed and in great anger ſhee anſwered. That I might not be reckoned among thoſe Knights, who deſerued the loue of a Ladie of her calling, and thenceforth I ſhould not be ſo hardie, as to ſpeake to her, or come in her preſence. Goe quoth ſhe, and follow her loue that gaue thée thy Faulcon, wherein thou takeſt ſuch pleaſure, and neuer maiſt thou turne againe to me.

With theſe wordes ſhee flong from me to a Window, where I was wont alwaies to ſtande and talke with her, beguiling the time in no leſſe contentation, then thoſe happy ſoules in the Elyſian Fieldes, ſuch was the rare beautie, good grace, and ſingular courteſie of my ſometime beloued Lady Valerica. I cannot denie, but that a Ladie beſtowed the Faulcon on me, but in any ſuch ſpeech as my Ladie imagined, God knowes is moſt vntrue, nay could death compell me ſo much to abuſe my choſen Miſtreſſe.

Seeing my Ladie then ſo rigorous, and her anſwere ſeuere, yet aſſured of mine owne innocencie and loyaltie: I was ſurprized with ſuch ſurpaſſing beauineſſe, as

euery houre expected when my feeble spirit would forsake his long despised habitation. My Lady being thus resolute in her owne opinion, and disdaining all meanes I shewed to perswade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as vnworthy of their societie, and then betooke my selfe to this brutish kinde of life, where I might without any impeach, breath forth my continuall complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place, without the knowledge of my Lorde or any other, this Dwarfe onely excepted, who euermore hath bene my most trustie Seruant, and fetcheth my necessaries at a village neere adioyning, and by his honest perswasions, hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus haue you heard in breefe the cause of my sorrow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as haue in like manner tried and suffered, the disdaine and ingratitude of vnconstant Ladies.

Palmerin hauing heard the fortunes of the Knight repeated to him the graces and fauours of his Lady Polynarda, what honour shee did him in her Fathers Court, and how hee was in daunger to receiue the like reward as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing indeed that his misshappe would sorte to that issue, hee fell downe at the feete of this poore refused Louer. The Knight perceiuing, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of this alteration, breathing forth a vehement sigh, he said:

Alas wretched Caitiffe that I am, hath my destinie made mee so vnhappie, that enduring an extreamitie worse then death, I cannot die, and yet hee that did but heare my misery hath lost his life? I will not liue any longer to preiudice any other man, but will now make way to the ende of mine owne troubles. So then he drew forth Palmerins Sworde, and offered for to thrust it into

his body: but Palmerin receyued to his former estate, start-
ed suddainely vppe, and catching him fast in his Armes,
sayde.

How now my Friende? Will you be so inconsiderate,
that for such a little temporall paine which your body endu-
reth, for to condemne your soule to euerlasting perdition?
And though your Passions touch you so seuerely, as that you
will not affourde any pittie to your selfe: let me now intreate
you to forbeare this bad humour. For not without great
reason haue I sustained this sudden motion, remembring the
vnspeakable comfort I receiued by one, who by false sugge-
stions, or slaunderous reports (which woundeth more deepe
then the Fatall weapon) may in like sorte be chaunged into
such conceyte, as her Judgement may extende a Hell of tor-
ments.

Yet can I not denye (your Ladie hauing with such open
paine refused you) but you haue great occasion to grieue
thereat, yet not to stretch the extreamity so farre as to dis-
saine, or worke iniurie to your calling to memory howe light
the opinion of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and
how prompt shee is to Iealousie, especially when shee loueth
feruently. And if heretofore shee loued you feruently, it is
impossible but she should feele some part of your anguish, and
more violently (I thinke then your selfe can. Trust then in
him that hath all hearts at commaund, repose your selfe con-
stantly on his good Prouidence, for he will not leaue you fru-
strate of your honourable intent, standing with Iustice, and
perfect integritie.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable perswasions
the Dwarfe couered the Table, and then sette before them
such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had prouided, and
when they had well refreshed themselues, Palmerin toke
his leaue of the Knight, promising him (if hee coulde by any
good meanes) to giue some ease to his oppressions. Varnan
returned him many thankes, commaunding his Dwarfe
to conduct him into the High-waye, beeing not a little sor-

rowfull

row full to leaue his companie, who then had so well aduised and comforted him. Palmerin beeing come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarfe, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending ta finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because hee would somewhat solicite the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So ryding along in this determination, he espyed a Knight and two Squyres before him, the Knight thus speaking to one of his Squyres. I knowe not whether it bee time as yet to enter the Garden? or if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither? Goe see if that shee be there, and make thy return quickly to me against. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knewe well that it was she for whome the solitary Knight lined in such pensiuenesse: Wherefore being mooued with with pitty of his miseryes, he sayde to himselfe: See here the false treacheryes of a trothlesse Woman, so vnhonourably to forsake the man that loueth her so deerely, and now to preferre the villany of this intercepting Traytour? But I shall teache him ere I goe, what a penalty belongs to the preuenting of a loyall knight, and comming to the Knight, hee sayde thus. Art thou a man Villaine? that would forestall the Loue of the best Knights in England? Now by my Swoorde, thou shalt deerely pay for thy disloyaltie. With these wordes, hee lent him such a sound stroake on the head, as hee cleft it therewith to the very teeth.

The two Squyres seeing theyr Maister slaine, beganne to haste away: but Palmrin caught him that was sent to the Garden, to whome he sayde. Come on Syrrha, if thou louest thy life, bring me where the Lady is: If thou doest not, thou shalt neuer followe thy trade any longer. The Squyre by no meanes durst doo otherwise: So he brought him to the Wicket, where Valerica was woont to receiue in her Louer, and knocking with his finger, as his Maister was accustomed: Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her Friende, cast her armes about Palmerins Necke, who brought her in his armes foorth of the Garden, commanding

ing the Squyre presently to followe him. Valerica much a-
lashed hereat, sayde. How now sweete Friende? whether
will you carry mee? knowe you not, if my Father heardes
hereof, that neyther of vs durst approache before him?

Tush Madame (saide Palmerin, these are but words, there
is no remedie, but you must goe with mee. So that neyther
with teares nor Requests would hee bee intreated, but pre-
sently mounted on Horse-backe, causing the Squyre to helpe
the Lady vp before him, because he would be sure shee should
not make an escape from him, and ryding away towards the
Forrest, because the darke Night drewe on, hee left the roade
way, seeking some litte place where they might conueniently
repose themselues for that Night. At length he founde out a
litle Thicket, where they alighted, and hee turning forth his
Horse to Pasture, toke off his Helmet, and came to the La-
die, desiring her to be contented with such harde Lodging for
that Night: But when she beheld that it was not her Friend,
wringing her hands shee thus exclaymed, Alasse, vnhappy
wretch that I am: How treacherously am I thus deceiued?
What mishappe may be comparable to mine, hauing lost my
deere Friende, and abyding at his pleasure that hath cruelly
murthered him? Ah harde Fortune, why art thou so incon-
stant, to exchaunge my former pleasures into this grieuous
stratageme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde: You must
thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Diuine permis-
sion, who hath thus appoynted this contrarietie, to punish
your lowsenesse, and your exceeding disloyaltie towardes him,
who loues you deerer then his owne soule: and for your loue
leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and vncomfor-
table place of this Worlde. And seeing he hath thus long en-
dured such hardnesse for your sake, it is good reason that you
should in some sorte participate with his miserie. Feare not
therefore, for I haue spoken nothing of him, but what I haue
seene: and that by great chaunce haue I thus brought you a-
way from your Fathers house, meaning by Gods good fauour

(this

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, who
true loue aboue all other hath deserued you. Ah misery
comparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shun
what the destenies haue appointed, how falls my fortu
from ill to worse? Must I now goe with that coward Va
nan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised: I had rat
die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, b
in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you estéem hi
and a better knight then he, that could defend his Pate w
no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and l
the other that liues to do you seruice. So long they stood
these teames, vntill a knight passed by them, to whom Va
rica cried. Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mé,
deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled
and violently brought me hither against my will. What
thou said the knight. that thus dishonorest this Lady? I
teach thée better knowledge of thine order before wee pa
Palmerin quickly bridling of his Horse, & clasping on his
met, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldest ta
her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my Swo
follow thy way, or I shall shew thée what discipline I vse
foles, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacitie
Dosst thou so obstinately stand in thy trechery? saide th
the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumptio

CHAP.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Vernan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.

BEfore we paſſe any further, you ſhall vnderſtande that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King ſent after the Lady with Fryſoll, to make deliuerance of the Caſtle, as you haue hearde before: hee being Palmerins Friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes toke ſuch regard of the Ladyes complaint, as hee marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin ſeing that Hermes would needes tryehis Fortune, encountred him with ſuch a rough ſtroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was ſhiuered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commaunding him to helpe vp the Ladie, or elſe hee would ſend him after his Maiſter. The Squyre alighted and holpe vppe the Ladie, rewarding her with an infinite number of curſes, becauſe his Maiſter had ſpedde ſo ill by her meanes.

Truſt me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but yll beſtowed, yet ſuch is the regarde of the ſolitary Varnan, as to finiſh that Hell of torments which hee ſuffers, I muſt nedes holde better opinion of my paines. With theſe and many ſuch like ſpeeches he beguiled the time, till they came neare to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee ſawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no ſwuer alighted, but he

he caught her in his armes, saying: Is it possible (sweete
tune, that after so long mishap, and when all hope was
ly gone, thou canst affoorde me this gracious favours
happy Eyes, that haue powred forth such showers of te
what felicity may compare with yours, contemplating
the rare beauty of your Mistresse? Say it be, that aft
many insupportable torments, the meane thereof should
turne such pleasure, comfort, and sollace: Depart then
pack hence lamentations, griefe, torments, and all melan
ly conceits, get you elswhere, & in the most Barbarous
treys of the world make your abiding, for the commande
hence, in whom consists my special contentment. Oh
nate Knight, how may I recompence this inexplicable
nes, surmounting all other that euer was heard of? Im
ble is it for me to requite this favour, though all my Pow
ens, life, bodie, and spirite, were bound to your service.
Heauen will supplye my want, and continue you in as gr
happinesse, as your noble Bountie hath brought me comf

Forbeare these speeches (said Palmerin) albeit I had
a thousand times as much, yet should I but accomplish
one Christian owes to another. I pray you therefore le
goe into your Caue, least loe be espyed, and so preuente
side, I am so ouer watched, as I cannot stand on my
through the very want of sleepe. Valerica seeing her sel
such an vncouth place, and in his custodie shee most detes
her angry stomacke would not suffer her to speake one wo
but when she hadde a while rested her selfe, on a seate of
grant Hearbes and Flowers, which Varnan diligently p
pared, Palmerin saide: Beholde Madame Valerica, sa
what place, in what solitarie, austere, and sharpe kinde of
your Varnan lines by your commandement, now seeing
and Fortune is so favourable, let not your rigour and dis
semblance thereof mutabilitie. Consider a little, what griefes
hath endured in this comfortlesse place, which verily have
so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompe
the very least of them. I beseeche you then, if heretofore

e borne him hard liking, let it now he forgotten, and if vn-
isedly hee hath any way offended you, let his long tor-
nts and surpassing loyaltie serue now for satisfaction, and
e him to your Husbande, as the most perfect and faithfull
uer in England. You likewise Syr Varnan, without re-
mbrance of your passed miseries, or her too rigorous refu-
s heretofore, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all ho-
unite your self to her by present speeches: for seeing I haue
ught her hither, it wil remaine a continuall reproch to me,
ou would not accept her as your Spouse and wife. Ah my
rd (qd. Varnan) with right good will shal I accomplish your
mmand, so may it stand with my Ladies liking, for heerein
nsists the whole sume of my desires. Ah miserable beyond
other (saide Valerica to Palmerin) must I by a varlet be
iected to so vile an extremitie, and constrained to take him
my Husband whome I cannot affect, hee beeing the most
e and cowardly Knight that euer I knewe? Must I a-
inst my Fathers will, and by my Traytors procurement,
t hath so much abused mee, as no vertuous Knight would
haue wronged a Lady, be thus compelled to my Marriage?
uen cannot like heereof, and rather will I die, then doo the
ng shall returne me such reproch. Then shriked she so pit-
lly as though she had bene quite distraught of her sences:
ich Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah
ntle Knight, what griefe is it to heare her in these tor-
nts, whom I loue much better then mine owne life? and
whom I rather desire to die, then not to enioy her with
owne liking. I cannot liue seeing her in these afflicti-
s, and therefore conuey her againe to her fathers house,
no sooner shall she be departed hence, but life will for-
e this forlorne Carkasse, then shall my death assure her
w faithfully I loued. Palmerin seeing the obstinacie of
lerica, sayd. By God Lady, I thinke in all the world is
t a more cruell and disloyall woman then you are, per-
ade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you a-
ine to your fathers Castle, I shall doo your errande

there

theres in such sort, as all your life time repentance will hee
excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much m
then you deserue, if you will remember your selfe, and fo
are so stubborne, I shall giue you the desert (offering to d
his Sword) that such ingeatefull and trecherous wom
worthily merit. Valerica ascayde when she saw him in
choler, and doubting hæ would discouer her incontinent
past, threw her selfe at his fæte, desiring him to appeas
anger, and she would obey what ere hæe commaunded.
(quoth she) seing my fortune hath brought me into his co
pany, who for his vnfeigned loue to me, hath so long su
red wonderfull calamities: well might I be estæmed of
tish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will
his wife, and giue him my faith hære in your presence. Pal
rin well pleased with this aunswere, toke her vp by the ha
and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there to
ther by solemne promises, and afterward laide him dow
to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica
his armes, with swæte kisses and amorous spæches, exp
led all former heauinesse, estæming himselfe the happ
knight in the whole worle, hauing now at length obta
the fauour of his Mistresse, giuing her to vnderstand, h
acceptable the gift of pittie was, cõming from so rare a
ture to her languishing beloued. Palmerin seing them so
agrædde, would now depart and leaue them to their fortu
but by earnest importunitie of these louers, he stayed th
longer then he entended. Now was the loue betwæne th
twaine, far greater then they hatred had bene, so that a
they had stayed three or foure dayes in the Caue, with such
entertainment as the Dwarfe could make them, they dep
ted to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtained peac
with the said Parentes of Valerica, continuing long time
together in comfort of their loue, and ending their lines in
loyaltie thereof.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of them giuing him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaule his twelue Knights, out of whose hands he deliuered Hermes.

WHen Palmerin saw Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their seruice, and kinde adieues deliuered on al sides, he left them in their Vault, and set forward on his iourney, lodging that night in an auncient knightes castle, where hee vnderstood, how the brethren of the slaine knight, besieged Valericas father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned an other course, and leauing the broad way that guided to London, he met two Ladies accompanied with three squires, who had cast off a Faulcon and a Martin to flie, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would needes tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. If sir knight you haue no hast on your iournie, because you stay to behold our passime, therefore if you will go with vs to a wood hereby, you shall there see a braue flight indeede, such woorthy game is there so plentifull, & my faulcon so good as she will neuer faile. Palmerin who aboue all passimes loued Hawking, rode with ye Ladies to ye Marshes by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Mallard: as the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the castle, Palmerin

merin manned the Ladyes Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seing him so braue a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behauiour, and that hee tendered her Hawke gently: was immediatly surprised with his Loue, so that she desired to knowe of whence he was, whom she could so gladly affoord to chuse for her Beloued, and hauing long earnestly beheld him, she said. Syr Knight, that I might entertain you as your estate beseemeth, I pray you tell me your name and whither you trauell. Lady (qd. Palmerin) I am a meere straunger, who by Fortune on the Sea was brought to this Countrey, and because the King had warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, I remained a while here as a Souldyour, attending a prosperous winde, to transporte me backe againe into my Natiue Countrey. The Lady hearing him and iudging him one of the Famous Knightes, that came to the Court, loued him more earnestly then she did before, auiuding such surpassing delights and delicates for him, as she wished that Night had bene a yeere in length. The Lady withdrawne, and many pleasant speeches past betweene Palmerin and the Ladyes Daughter, shee conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour might so auouche it) that Palmerin neuer might haue any other Bedfellow. But perceiuing him to his good rest, she departed to her Chamber, where small store of sleepe suffised her that night. In the morning Palmerin called for his Horse to be gone: the Lady very sorowfull so soone to forgoe his company, but seeing there was meane to holde him, she said. Seeing your departure may not be denyed, I would present you with the Faulcon which yesterday did so specially content you, which if you please to accept for my sake, I shall not be vnmindfull of the honour you haue done me, chiefly, that you vouchsafed to be here this night, being as welcom hither as the King himself.

Seeing it is your pleasure Madame (said Palmerin, that I bestowe your Faulcon on me, I accept it as the onely thing you could giue me, and by the faith of a Knight I promise

hat I will kéepe it for your sake, and neuer part therewith, by force or villany it be not taken from me. The Lady for ioyfull hereof as might be deuised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here must you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loued him so dearely as after she vnderstood hee had forsoke the Countrey, she gaue herselfe altogether to this recreation. Her Father perceiuing he was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her euermore the best Haukes that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly giuen, and the like sort taken, proued very vnfortunate to both the Knights, causing them to curse the houre, that euer they accepted the Ladies liberality, came neare her Castle, or saw her Haukes, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceiue in Palmerins fortune, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any aduenture, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gaules Knights guarded the passage, which scant hailed Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he should be deceiued in his intent, and not sée Trineus slaine as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his comming, wherefore he would haue turned another way, but one of the Knights called to him. Returne coward returne, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhood, for we will make proofe whether there be any in thée.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hauke, and beloath to lose her, was not desirous to Ioust: but séeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small honestie Sir Knight to challenge the man that hath no will your sport: but if there be no remedie, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will first repent. I sée thou canst not well, quoth the Knight, and beléeue me thou wert best if thou couldest so escape; but séeing thou art so long before thou art readie, Ile bring thée to such a place where trées shall not hinder thée, and in one yéere thou shalt spare

the wearing of Boots and Spurres in such a comfort
place, as the Sunne nor day light shall offend thine e
I hope I haue learned, said Palmerin, to keepe my selfe w
such places: but I would faine know the gentle Cham
Page, that is so skilfull in waiting with his Pantofles,
he can teach knights errant how to weare them. The kni
being angry, called forth the rest of his companions, and
whome he espied Hermes prisoner, his Helmet lying by h
and his armes pinnioned: therefore to reuenge his inju
he called his Squire, saying; I pray thee my Friend look
my Hauke a while, for I am come to defende thy Mai
honour, and calling to the Dukes Knight, saying, Come
let vs dispatch quickly, for I haue earnest businesse in a
ther place: the Knight laughing at him, answered. W
how now Captaine? thinke you to passe hence so easi
Here are sufficient to stay your hasty iourney, eleuen m
must talke with you, the worst of them able to abate y
pride, for your horse lackes a stable, and we will pro
him one. So couching they Launces, they met toge
with such force, as the Dukes knight was throwne from
Horse, his shoulder being broken with the weight of
fall: Palmerin arresting the Knights horse for his ow
gaue him to Hermes squire in keeping, saying; Becaus
Knight is not willing to get on horse-backe againe, ho
this for me, and I may lye at ease to see the fortune of
fellowes. Then came another Knight from the tent, wh
Palmerin welcomed in so friendly manner, as hee lay
able to stirre hand or foote: with this one Launce he vnh
sed foure more, and brake it so valiantly on the seaue
Knight, as while he liued he meant to iouste no more. W
a fresh Launce he dismounted all the rest, none of them
ing willing to deale with him any further: whereupon h
mercy came to Hermes, saying. What do you sir Knig
Why take you not the best Horse among all the boo
That shall I Sir, seeing you commaund me, albeit not l
since you serue me as these knights are: yet God be than

thy your meanes I am deliuered from imprisonment, from these knights intended to kepe me, because I had slaine foure of them, and at the fift encounter my horse was killed, which was the cause of my foyle and taking. The knights (quoth Palmerin) haue now leysure to rest them, for they were troubled before with watching for strangers: I doubt not now but we may quietly passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder vs. Hermes mounting on horse-backe, commaunded his squire to take each one for him likewise, and so they rode on together reioycing at this good fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demaunded Palmerins name, which when hee knew, in great reioysing hee sayde: Ah worthy knight, now is my trauel ended in search of you: for me, I would refuse the best citie in England, in respect of the great friendship I haue found at your hands, as also for the comfort your presence will bring to our dread Lord, and your noble companions, who long time haue expected your desired returne. As they rode on in these speaches, they came to a faire fountaine, where Palmerin meant alight to refresh himselfe, and to bind vp such small wounds, as hee had taken in iousting against the knights of Gaule.

CHAP. LXI.

¶ How Fryſol was deliuered out of Palmerins handes, by the meanes of Colmelio his Squire.

THe ſame day that Palmerin ioufted with the knights of Gaule, the duke himſelfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, hee loſt the ſight of the paſtime, which afterward he repented, becauſe he had with him the moſt part of his knights, ſo that no one in the caſtle left in his Caſtle but Fryſol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding ſo many knights foyled by one, marualled not a little what hee might bee and after long conſideration of his haughtie exploits, he ſaide to himſelfe, I cannot thinke this knight to bee the man, againſt whom I combatted ſometime in Fraunce yet know I no man liuing but hee, that could performe ſuch rare chiualrie. Now, becauſe Palmerin had changed his armor, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he deſirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reaſon of his former experience: againe, if hee ſhould ſuffer him to paſſe without ſome triall, he iudged it would returne to his great diſhonour, wherefore hee reſolued to aduenture his fortune. And in this determination hee came to the dukes ſiſter, who loued him intirely, as you heard before, ſhe beginning with him in this manner. I cannot ſufficiently marueil ſir Fryſol, how you haue ſuffered in your owne view, my brothers knights to be ſo ſhamefully confounded by one paſſenger: I deſire you ſweete friend, if euer you brake launce for a Ladies loue, that for my ſake you

ill deale with that proude knight, and make him know at you can abate his courage, were his head framed of the adest hammered braſſe. If you fulfill my requeſt, you ſhall do an acceptable deed to my brother, and to me ſuch ſervice, as I ſhall hereafter requite to your owne content. Madame (quoth Fryſol) I did intende to fight with him, but ſeing it pleaſeth you ſo graciouſly to command me, no danger can withhold me, becauſe the world can witnes, what great auaile ſo honorable a Ladyes fauor is, to the knight that liues to renowne her name. So departing from his lady he preſently armed himſelfe, and mounting on a luſtie courſer, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the two knights not a little glad therof, well hoping that he would reuenge their diſhonour. Fryſol contuned his trauaile ſo long, til at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreſhed himſelfe, who had no ſooner eſpied him, but inflamed with great ioy, ſayd to Hermes; I am ſure this knight comes hither is to ſeeke me, wherefore I intreat you by the reuerend loue you beare to your beſt beloued, not a-ny way to hinder that fight betweene vs, til the end deliuer victorie to one ſide or other: for he thinking to reuenge the reproch of his fellow, hath followed me to performe what they were not able. Then Palmerin ſodainly claſping on his helmet, mounted on horſebacke, and taking aduantage of the plaine field, becauſe it was moſt conuenient for the combat, which Fryſol perceiuing, ſcornefully ſayd; I thinke Sir knight, you are ſome kinde of prophet, becauſe you diuine ſo well the cauſe of my comming: vnhappie was it for you to preuaile in ſuch ſort againſt the duke of Gaules knights, which you muſt now pay for with to late repentance. If I did them any harme, ſayd Palmerin, it was their owne ſeeking, and by your arrogant ſpeeches it may be preſumed, you are one of the ſame company: but the loue of the Dukes ſiſter, cannot ſhelde you from your deſerued recompence. At theſe words, Fryſol well perceiued, that this was the knight hee ſo much doubted: Neuerthe-

ielfe his courage was so good, as remembring the promise he made to his Lady, gaue spurres to his Horse, and they encountred with such braue chiualry, as the shiuers of their Launces flew vp into the aire, and then they assailed each other so roughly with their swordes, as well they might bee esteemed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either side, for Frysol was determined to die or conquere, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their blood, their armour and shields battered in peeces, and no hope left on either side of life. But as alwaies some mischance or other followes a noble mind, so fell it out with Frysol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got sure hold on his shield, which Frysol striuing forcibly to recouer, the buckle brake in sunder, and with the sodaine breach thereof he fell downe backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, said. And let me neuer hereafter bee called Palmerin, if now I do not reuenge my selfe sufficiently. Which words when Frysols squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his feete, saying. Noble knight, I beseech you for the honour you beare to arms, to pause a while, & tel me if you be Palmerin D'Oliua, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue suffered great paine and trauaile to finde you out. Palmerin presently knew Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his foster father, whose sight was so ioyfull to him, as casting away his sword, he ran and embraced him about the neck, saying: My deere friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happie may I account my selfe quoth Colmelio, to finde you when all hope was past: hauing trauailed so many countryes, and all in vaine: if then you loue me as you make protestation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my maister Frysol, and giue ouer your fight, for long time haue I serued him as my Lord, and well hath hee deserued much better seruice then mine. Colmelio, sayd Palmerin, the thing thou demandest is meritorious great, ne-

ces-

rtheleſs ſuch is my comfort hauing mette with thée, as I raunt thy requeſt, and happily hath hee nowe eſcaaped with fe, conſidering what occaſions haue paſt vs heretofore. So king Colmelio by the hand, he ſaid to Fryſoll, Syr knight, your Squires intreaty, I ſuffer you quietly to departe, and eate with mee againe at any time you thinke good: but you all goe lyke another Squyre, for Colmelio at this time all goe with me. Fryſoll being wounded in many places, nd very faint e with leſſe of his bloud, might eaſily be indu- d to this agrement of peace: But comming to Colmelio, e ſaide: Wilt thou forſake thy Maiſter, and goe with his e- nmie: Truſt me Syr (quoth Colmelio) you muſt néds par- on me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to ſéeke im I forſoke my Fathers houſe, and haue continued a very houreſome ſearch. If thou wilt néedes goe (ſaid Friſol) and et my intreaties may not diſſwade thée, I will pray for the ucceſſe of thy deſires, and thy Aduancement to honour, and hile I liue I will make account of thée as my Friende and rother. So returning as he came, he beganne in this man- er, to exclaime againſt Fortune. Ah cruell and inconſtant ady: ſufficed it not thée to diſhonour mée before mine ene- ie, but thou muſt nowe robbe mee of my Squyre I loued ſo ercely: but ſo haſt thou dealt with them of higheſt Calling, o infinit Kings and Potentates haſt thou deceiued, and (be- re their chiefeſt enemyes) diſhonoured: ſuch hath beno thy reachery to mee now at this inſtant, that I may iuſtly com- laine of thée while I liue. As he continued theſe complaints, e mette diuers armed knights that came to aſſiſt him, and e Duke himſelfe in companie among them: who demaun- ed of Friſol, whither his enemy were ſlaine, or ſent away anquiſhed? Vanquiſhed (ſaide Fryſoll) thinke you ſo good knight may be ſo eaſily vanquiſhed? Then he diſcour ed is whole ſucceſſe: which the Duke hearing, exclaymed, on is Hunting, that hée was not in preſence when Palmerin alled: wherefore hee would néedes followe him, but onely hat Friſol intreated him to the contrary, becauſe the might

ap-

approched so neere, as it was impossible for him to ouert
Palmerin. The Duke in a maruellous rage, for that his
terprise fell out no better, returned with Frysoll, and an h
within Night they came to his Castle, where he called for
best Chyrurgions, charging them to giue diligent attend
on Frysoll. When the Dukes Syster heard the misfort
of her Friende, she came hastily to him in his Chamber,
after many sweete kisses, saide: I beseeche you my Lord
get my folly, for I was the cause of your mischaunce.

Madame (saide Frysoll) where no offence is committ
what neds any remission? If my Fortue haue beneild
not for mee to complaine on you, for your Request tende
myne owne honour: but I must be content with my ha
though it hath sorted to so bad effect, and this doth yet
fort me, that I receyued my foyle by the onely Knight in
Worlde. And if the Heauens please to lengthen my da
I shalbe desirous to do him seruice, for there is no man li
to whom I could better afford it. Now nede I not misl
hauing tryed him so often) if hee be worthy the loue of
Polinarda, for hee (beyond all others) doth best deserue it.

Why, how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so vnwise,
honour him so much, that hath so iniuryed you? and th
is most childish, to desire his seruice? Goe then and seek
whom thou so louest, for by my mine honour, I more de
thee now then any man in the Worlde, thou making such
putation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with ma
hatred. Frysoll smiling thereat, saide: Madam I must n
say so, seeing no ill words can amend mischaunce: So
out any answer, shee flong forth of his Chamber. The
day, the Duke called all his Knights, commaunding them
restraine the passage no longer at the Bridge, intending t
to the Court, so soone as Frisoll had recouered his health.

CHA

CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio, returned to London, and the good Entertaynment the King of England made them.

After that Fryſoll was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and ſundry embracings of Colmelio, went with him to the Fountaine, where he left Hermes, all three together, making no ſmall ioye, Colmelio for his happie finding of Palmerin, and hee for the loue of his ſuppoſed Brother, and Hermes, for the comme ſhould bring the King his Maiſter, being able now to ainte his Highneſſe with Palmerins Name, which hee loathe that any in the Engliſh Courte ſhould knowe, refore he ſaide: Nowe can you not (my Lorde) here- hide your Name, though you haue beene daintie of it all while. It is true Sir (quoth Palmerin) albeeit I little ght to bee diſcouered ſo ſoone: but ſeing it is ſo come to e, my hope is in the Higheſt, who will defende mee in all e attempts. Now tell mee Colmelio, what newes in ece? Truly my Lorde (quoth hee) the diſcourſe will be and tedious: therefore if you pleaſe to mount on Horſe- e, it will ſerue well to ſhorten the thought of our Iour- So as they roade towardes London, hee beganne to ourſe, in how many places hee had made ſearch and ſought in Greece, and how at length hee heard of him at Ma- on, by report of his conqueſt of the Serpent, at the moun- e Artiſæria, which was the meanes that had reſtored the g of Macedon to his former health. And afterwarder,

how

how hee left Greece trauelling into Allemaigne, and
thence into England, at what time the Emperour
er was discomfited: and hearing great Fame of Fryso
late Maister, hee spent some time in his seruice, not doub
but by his meanes to finde the man hee looked for. Palm
was somewhat moued, hearing Colmelio so commend
sol, wherefore he demaunded of him, if hee knewe any
of that Knights lignage. My Lord (quoth he) but I
assure yée, that hee is one of the most gentlest Knights
world, and hee concealeth his Parentage very secretly,
makes me iudge hee is descended of royall byrth. Aft
melio had ended his discourse, hee repeated to him some
of his Fortunes, in the ende perswading him that hee
remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in time ma
the loue hee bare him. By this time they were come
Citty of London, Hermes riding before to the Palace,
hee aduertised the King, howe Palmerin was returned
Cittie, which Newes so highly contented the King, as
times he embraced Hermes, for bringing the man he lon
sired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him
and presently both mounted on Horse-backe, to go
with theyr Friend, when so many Embracings, Court
and kinde Gratulations had passed between them, as
all at the meeting of long absent Louers: Ah my good
and Friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard Fortune
you from mee? and why did you departe, not vouchsafi
Farewell? What earnest occasion might cause such a
kinde departure? Trust mee, I perswaded my selfe in
of the long continuance of our Amitie, that death cou
procure such a seuere Enterprise. My deere Lord (quoth
mari) it seemeth you haue some cause to complaine
but when you vnderstand how matters haue happened,
will not condemne me altogether. For at the time of
parture, I thought verily to returne the nert day follo
but such importunate affayres continually fell out, as
could not returne vntill this very instant. Ptoloms sai

uch as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate me-
ing forbad all further accusations, and they became as good
iendes as euer they were. So rode they to the Pallace,
here the king attending their comming, perceiued at
ngth they were entred the Hall, when Palmerin falling
his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably
mbracing him, saide, Where hath my noble friend bene so
ng? What crooked fortune hath caused your so long ab-
nce? you departed from vs in blacke Armour, I pray
u tell vs, where did you conquere these sumptuous
mes? by the loue you beare to chiualrie and to mee: sa-
sfie me in my demaund. Palmerin seing the king conin-
him so straightly, reported the truth of all his aduen-
res, how he had that armour of the Ladie whose daugh-
her deliuered, and left his owne there broken in peeces.
he king embracing him againe, saide: I cannot be perswa-
d, but all especiall aduentures, high good fortunes, and
eefest honours in the world, are onely reserued for you, and
mong all the rest, most marualous is this of the Castle
the enchaunted Lake, which many knights haue hereto-
e attempted, but returned with the losse of their Horses,
rmour, and with great dishonour. Thrise Welcome are
u for these happie tydings, as also for your gentle courtesie
Frisoll, who is a knight of most honourable reputation.
t in regarde of your wearysome trauells, it is very requi-
e that you now should goe to rest your selfe: therefore lette
me bodie helpe to disarme you, and betake your selfe (on
ods Name) to your Chamber, Palmerin repined the kings
ounsell most expedient, and therefore did accordingly as he
mmaunded him: So hauing reposed himselfe a while, hee
me to see howe the Queene and her Daughter fared, who
ould not suffer him to depart thence, before he had likewise
quainted her with all his Fortunes: especially the whole
rcumstance of all his Trauells at the Castle of the Lake.
t Night being come, and euery one betaking themselues
rest, Palmerin demaunded of the Prince howe he follow-

ed

ed his deſires, and what he had concluded as concerning
lone: Ah deare friend, ſaid Trineus, why aſke you me
queſtion: do you not thinke that hauing ſo loſt you, I
wiſe was diſappointed of any meane to helpe mee: kn
then, that at this inſtant I am in the middeſt of all my
fortunes, for ſo badly hath it happened, that I am now
therfrom Agriola then euer I was, and I ſhall tell you
Not many dayes ſince, as I was familiarly deuiſing with
Ladie, the Duke of Gaules daughter chanced to heare
amorous ſpeeches as paſſed betweene the Princeſſe and
whereby ſhe gathered, that Agriola made ſom eſtimatiõ
whereupon ſhe laboured to cauſe my Miſtreſſe in ſhort
miſtike what I had ſo long trauelled to perſwade her
as thus.

That ill beſeemed a Princeſſe of her account, of ſo
ous diſcent, and daughter to ſuch a mighty King, to conſ
with ſtrangers, or vouchſafe a liſtening to any thing
ſayd: for they were none ſuch as ſhe reputed them, but
they had brought a Ladies honour into daunger, they
were ſatisfied, as they vſed it for a cuſtome am
their companions. And ſo well could ſhe, ſeede the
ceſſe humour, with theſe ſuborning and ſpightfull
tractions, which ſeemed vnto her as ſweete and friendly
ſwaſions, that in ſtead of the little lone I lately co
red, I finde nothing but frownes and diſdaine, that ſhe
ſcant affoord me a looke. Which diſcourteſie hath well
driuen me to diſpaire, in regard of her ſlender opinion
mee, as being ſo hindered onely through your abſence. Th
I determined with Ptolome, to leaue the Courte and
low you in trauaile: but the King by no meanes
permit mee, ſending many of his owne Knightes, becauſe
ſhould not goe: yet was I reſolued, that had you not co
no diſpleaſure whatſoeuer ſhould haue held mee here:
to finde you I intended, or loſe my life. This falleth out
ris hard, quoth Palmerin, for by theſe meanes we ſhall
here God knoweth how long: beſide. Hermes knoweth
name

ame, which makes me doubt leaſt we ſhall be reuealed: the
mperour likewiſe may be offended at our long tarriance.
n regard of all this, good Prince, I thinke it beſt, that I
nd your Squire and Vrbanillo my Dwarfe, to aduertiſe
s Maieſtie of our affaires, and how by reaſon of the tem-
ſt, we were caſt quite out of courſe ſo farre, as we could not
y any meanes aſſiſt his Armie, not doubting but to ſee his
ighneſſe in very ſhort time. In the meane while, we may
acile meanes to win the Princeſſe fauour againe, and
in good time depart hence, with the honourable prize that
ecame for. Trineus was newly reuiued with theſe ſpee-
es, wherefore he deſired, that betimes in the morning he
uld diſpatch their Seruants towards Allemaign. Which
lmerin failed not to do, in reſpect of a dreame he had the
ght before, for he imagined that he ſaw his Lady Polynar-
a in marualous beauineſſe, and that ſhe ſayd to him. Alas
y Lord, what ſhall become of me? For I am narrowly
ght to be ſeparated from you. This fearefull viſion ſo diſ-
aged him, as he ſent thence his Dwarfe, to ſhew her
at trouble he had with his dreame, and how conſtant he
mained in his loue to her.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXI

How Palmerin promised the Princesse Agriola, to conduct her out of England, with his friendes, which hee perfourmed to the speciall consent of the prince Trineus.

EArly on the next morning, Palmerin rose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarda wherein hee secretly put a ring which shee gaue him when hee departed from her, straightly commaunding Vrbanillo that hee should diligently attende on the Princesse till hee came which should bee with all the speede he could possible. Polome likewise wrote to his Ladie Brionella, and the Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediatly setting forward on their iourney. From this time Colmelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because hee knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time hee should rise to preferment. The day the king would ride abroade a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occasion to see the faulcon flie, beeing reputed by the king and all his traine, to be the best that euer flew. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the king that the knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same knight that wonne so much honour in France which so wellcontented the king, as he more and more desired his companie: summoning all his Barons and Lordes to his Court, where he made such feastes, triumphs, and other sportes, for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his

co

mpanyons as thē like had not béene of long time before,
At Night, when the Maskers, Mummeries and Moris-
es were in presence, that Palmerin espyed conuenient time
talke with the Princesse, he tooke her aside to a Window,
thus began. Madam, before I begin what I haue to ac-
aint you withall, I must giue you this ring, as I was com-
aunded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular
ertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to kéepe it continu-
lly on your finger: which Agriola receiuing, with a curteous
uerence, faithfully promised to accomplish his request: then
almerin, with earnest affection on his Friends behalfe, thus
ontinued his discourse. I cannot but maruell, fayre Prin-
esse, you beeing a Ladie of so speciall qualitie, renowned a-
ong the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare
egrity and profound iudgement, that you will be gouerned
the vnaduised perswasions of other: which I would not
lieue, had not the Prince Trineus certainely assured mee,
w since my departure, in stead of fauourable countenance,
the intreatance beséeming so great a Lorde, he can haue
thing but frownes, disdaine, and coye regarde, which is as
asie for him to indure, as a thousand deaths one after an o-
r. Assure your felft so farre beguiled, as your councellers
swade you from your chiefest good, desirous to withhold you
om the height of honour, whereof you cannot fayle-beeing
atched in Marryage with the most vertuous and worthie
rince Trineus. Make you no small account, that hee be-
g one of the most Noble States on the Earth, hath left his
arents, his Friendes, and Countrey, hath past so many so-
ary, strange, and vncouth Regions, hath adaentured the in-
rie of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and ra-
ng billowes, euery minute in daunger of Shipwracke, and
ll for your Loue? Thinke you that hée being Sonne to the
mperour of Allemaigne, attending euery day the rule and
uernmēt of the Empire, that he came hither to you in hope
your rich dowrie? No trust mee, Madame, and I thinke
ur owne Conscience doth so resolue you, that néerer home

hee could haue found other, endued with larger possessi-
then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame
your manifold vertues, rare life, choise beautie, and all
god gifts, hee was willing without regard of his owne
state, to thrust himselfe in daunger, yea, to forget
selfe for your loue, which hitherto hee hath with relig
seruice intreated, and except you intertaine him with
gracious fauour, hee is in danger of life. Which if it
happen by your occasion, for euer you shall bee noted
monstrous ingratitude, and Christendome shall
staine a losse vnrecouerable. How far such a thought
to be from you, I leaue to your owne construction. If
to you haue knowne mee, a knight readie to support
causes of Ladies far beneath your height, thinke you I
not greater reason to honour you? yea not to
with any request, but what may euery way aduance
credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of
imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnfeigned loue,
surpassing humanitie, cause you to make choyse of
aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it
out, that you will not regard good counsell, follow
ther the perswasion of meane capacities, whose iudgeme
may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your
nacie, and marke the end of such indiscreet censures.
that our company is yrksome to you, therefore (sooner
you imagine) we will remoue that occasion. I know
enough, that you intend to match with the duke of
who is but your fathers subiect: so refusing the degree
Empresse, you shall tarry in England, and bee a Duch
Thinke you, that if my Lord matched not with you,
greatest Princesse in Europe, would not triumph in
loue? Yes certainly Madam, when you may at leysu
downe and recount your losse, which you sustained by
terers and parasites. Thinke what will be the danger
departure, the Emperour his father, not minding to
ket the losse of his late armie, will send such a puis
strength

strength into England, as the King your father, nor the Duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole ruine of this country. The meane to preuent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquilitie, is in entertaining the counsell I haue giuen you: where otherwise your selfe conceite, makes way to manifold misfortunes and dangers. Thus concluding his speeches, in great heauinesse he turned from her, whereat the Princesse inwardly greeued, for the Ring which he had giuen her was of such vertue, that since she had put it on her finger, shee was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as she could not thinke on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doubtfull conceit of her owne spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and onely comfort in these heauy passions, What feare hath these hard and rigorous speeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladies like my selfe, I was bene perswaded to cast off the Princes loue, accounting him but a simple knight errant: but now being assured of his nobilitie, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleeue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall commaund me. Yet this I must request, that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse for euer, then this famous name of my father should be any way endangered. Beleeue me Lady, quoth Palmerin, if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaine this generall benefit, for hencefoorth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your father with warre, hauing matched his daughter with the great Emperours sonne of Allemaigne. To confirme this promise, you shall giue me this sweete hand which I kisse, as the hand of the soueraigne Lady and Empresse of high Allemaigne, that you will not shrinke hereafter from this honorable determination; but for your owne regard, you must

conceale this Contract from your moſt truſtie Friendes, and
diſpoſe in ſuch ſorte of your ſelfe: for I hope to compaſſe the
meanes and opportunitie, that you ſhall leaue England, and
goe to the noble regions of your moſt worthy Lord and Hus-
band. What I haue promiſed (ſayde Agriola,) I will per-
forme, and with what ſpeede you ſhall thinke conuenient: and
beſide I repoſe ſuch truſt in you, that hauing bene ſo fortunate
hitherto in your Enterpriſes, you will be moſt carefull in the
compliſhing theſe deungerous intentions. Thus being
they departed, the marriage of Trineus and Agriola was con-
cluded, and becauſe they would not as then be ſuſpected, they
ſlept into the Daunce, next the young Prince, ſhewing their
amiable and pleaſant geſtures: which Trineus (in his other
turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not
ſo long conferred with his Ladie, but that ſome aſſured reſo-
lution was determined, yet hee diſſembled his inward ioy
ſo cunningly as he could. Eache eye was fixed on theſe two
braue Knights, the Ladies and Gentle-women perſwaded
themſelues, that they neuer beheelde more Noble perſonages
deſeruing like eſtimation for their ſpeciall Chiualrie, as also
for their Bountie and Courtly Ciuilitie.

Thus paſſed the Feaſt in all kinde of pleaſures, and the
two Knights withdrawing themſelues into their Chamber,
Palmerin diſcourſed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and
how he had with ſuch cunning purſued the matter, that in the
ende he had obtained what hee demaunded, reporting the
queſe of the gentle concluſion he made with the Princeſſe.

Thoſe ioyfull newes drawe the Prince into ſuch a quan-
rie, as hee could not expreſſe his ſecrete content, when
Palmerin awaking him out of his muſing, ſayde: Sir I
true Knight, I neuer thought that a man of your eſtate co
be of ſo ſlender courage. What countenance would you
in a matter of ſorrow, when ſuch dainty tydings make you
effeminate? Be of good cheere Man: Agriola is your o
and none but Trineus muſt be her onely Lord and Hus
I muſt confeſſe my Lorde, (ſayde Trineus,) that my

nia, but little beseemes my calling: but that cause therof is, that I know no desert in my selfe that may be esteemed worthy the least favour of my Lady. Beside, these newes brought me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine own, but in her onely I liue, and shee holdes the ballance of my danger or felicity, in that I was borne to be her servant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now we lose the favour of the time, we never (I feare) shall recover the like, therefore let vs so soone as we can, prouide all things ready for our departure. Refer that to me, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make prouision. The next day hee went to the maister of a ship, to know when time would serue for their secret departure, who answered him, that the time was then very conuenient, the winde serving prosperously, and the Sea calme and nauigable, and hee would furnish him with all necessaries for his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all things be in readines, that we may launch away vpon halfe an houres warning. So departed the maister about his busines, and Palmerin to the prince Trineus, whom he inflamed with these glad tydings, now nothing remaining but to know the princesse pleasure, she being likewise as ready to depart as the most forward. But (quoth Palmerin) how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I will, sayd the Princesse, this night feigne my selfe sicke, and for my greater quiet, cause my Ladyes to absent my Chamber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gate of the Pallace, which is not far from my lodging, where I may passe vnseene of any, and from thence goe with you safely to the Hauen. This practise was faithfully conceiued betweene them, and Agriola withdrew her selfe closely to her chamber, where at night she began her counterfeit sicknesse, commanding her Ladyes to leaue her alone, because she would see if shee could sleepe a little. Her Ladyes little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their

owne lodgings very pensiue and sorowfull, which Agriola, perceiuing, couered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights staid her comming, Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conuaied her in that maner to the princes chamber, where they altogether laide downe the order for their embarking, Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselues, and taking with them the princesse costly iewels, wherof she had plentifully stored her selfe, they came to the hauen, where they found the ship and mariners ready, and getting all aboord, the wind serued for their auaile, they set saile, and before day they got farre enough from London.

CHAP. LXII.

How the king of England and the Queene were aduertised, how their daughter Agriola was conuayed away, and of their sorrow for her departure

THe Duke of Gaules daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princesse, absenting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to disquiet her Ladie, being sicke as she supposed: but comming at length to see how shee fared, finding the bedde emptie, and Agriola gone, shee presently made a great cut-crie, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogether amazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Quæns Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but how, or when, they knew not. The Quæne at these tydings suddenly arose, and comming to her

daughters

daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into such pitifull acclamations, farre surpassing those of Maguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Prouince in the wood.

In these lamentings shee returned to the king, whose heauines exceeded iudgment, for the losse of his daughter, and then came diuerse lords and gentlemen, who declared that the strange knights were likewise departed. Which caused such a rumour through all the Citie, that they had stolen away the Princesse. The King vnderstanding the generall sorow for his daughters absence, said. In soth my friends, if these knights haue done such seruice for mee, they haue sufficiently recompenced themselues, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could deuise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my daughter, for that I am perswaded shee procured this mischaunce. But now I well perceiue what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermore serued the Emperour of Allemaigne, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in vaine for me to blame him, or his companions, if they toke the aduauntage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdemeanour. Thus the King would not suffer any pursute after them, though the Quéene and her Ladies earnestly intreated him: hee answering that no such mone should be mãde, for a child so vngratefull and disobedient, but hauing committed an action so vile and enforme, she should no more account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth hée) so refuse her, in that shee would leaue her parents, and depart with straungers: happie might wee haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her infancie. The Quéene séeing her lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as shee could, because shee would not moue him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arriued at the Court, who most of all

greeued at these vnhappy tidings, wherefore hee persw-
ded the king to proclaime open warre against the Emp-
rour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight wh-
most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus th-
Emperors sonne. When the king heard the Dukes spe-
ches, forgetting his anger, he reioyced, esteeming him-
happy, and his daughter wife, in matching her selfe wi-
such a husband: and if she had made her choyse among
the Princes of the world, shee could not haue sorted
one comparable in honor. In breefe aunswered the duke
that for a daughter so lost, hee would not seeke the death
his louers and subiects: but being one of Fortunes cha-
ges, he could not withstand it, and thus the king wisely
patiently endured his griefe.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Vrbanillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arriued a
the Emperours Court, and what great ioy their com-
ming procured.

IN this place our history taketh th-
occasion, how the King of Fraunc-
daily expecting newes from Palmerin
as concerning his intent of marriag-
betweene his daughter and the Prin-
Trineus: but seeing hee heard no ti-
ings at all, hee determined to send h-
ambassadors to the Emperor, electing for cheefe in th-
embassage the Count of Armigane, to whome hee gau-
full power and authority to conclude the marriage betwee-
Trineus and his daughter Lucemania, as also of th-
princess

Princesse Polynarda with his sonne and heire. The king dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more royaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being aduertised of their arriuall, made no great account thereof, such was his greefe for his sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tidings, as also for the foyle his Armie sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadours of Fraunce stayed with the Emperour, Vrbanillo and the Princes Squire entered the hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very louingly, he demaunded for Palmerin and his sonne Trineus, when they deliuering their letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedie returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadours messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tidings of my sonne, you may returne to the Counte your Maister, desiring him to come when hee thinks conuenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. Then the Emperour taking Vrbanillo by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Maister: where is he: is my sonne with him? My gracious Lord, quoth the Dwarfe, where your noble sonne abideth, there is my Maister, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And hereof I can assure your Maiestie, that you haue a sonne, who good reason ought to bee numbred among the best Knights liuing, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetuall memorie will record his deedes of chiualrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their comming, which will be some so as they can possibly. I euer perswaded my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: therefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are

are they whensoeuer they come. By this time Polyna
heard of the Dwarfes arriuall, which greatly pleasing
she sayde to Brionella; I pray thee sweete friend go
and seeke the Dwarfe, that wee may knowe what is
come of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionel
who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom
she knew to be one of the company, with all speede
plished the Princesse commandement, and found the
full messenger with the Emperour, who tooke great
light in the Dwarfes reports: but his Maiestie pe
ning with what chearefull countenance shee came to
Vrbanillo to her Ladie the Princesse, bad him go with
hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreame sadne
would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Em
rours presence, embraced him many times to know
tydings, when the Dwarfe not ignorant of the La
passions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to chearе her: but wh
the Princesse saw Vrbanillo comming, with the tea
in her eyes shee ranne apace to meete him, and casting
armes about his necke, embraced him very often, saying
Tell me Vrbanillo, tell me, how fares my brother and
Maister Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, so w
as your olume heart can wish, and will ere long be h
with you. Then deliuered he the letter from Trineus, wh
certified her of his short returne, and that he would bri
with him the thing she most esteemed. But the wag kno
ing she expected other matters, and that her brothers m
dicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gaue her his m
sters letter, when she hastily breaking open the zeale, fou
the ring which her loyall friend had sent her, and after s
had welcomed it with many deuout kisses, she put it on h
finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this tok
safely, in witnesse of the Knights gentlenesse that sent it
whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of aboue all o
ther. Then reading the letter, and discreetly consideri
(not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, hum
bl

e supplications, entire excuses, and extreame passions, that r friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuering ma- y bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I be- ue well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being ured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing ould stay you from the place, where the onely remedie of ur dolorous greefes abideth. But seeing for my loue you ay not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual fetie, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that ine eyes ouer watched with tedious expectation, and my art neere tyred with bootlesse wishings, may by your pre- nce be thorowly comforted. Afterward Vrbanillo breefely ported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Maister, e loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her autie and rare perfections, whereupon Polinarda thus an- wered:

Beleeue me Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou est she is, her great vertues and firme loyaltie likewise mparable, enuy and false report shall not impeach her, to be koned among the most happy Ladies of the world, and r desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertnous oughts she first began them. The like (I doubt not) will ppen to thy maister, for fortune hath euermore so specially onred him, as now it were against reason she should al- r her countenance. So departed the Dwarfe from the rincesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes ld get any other tidings of his son then what you haue rd, which made him doubt the dwarfe iuggled with him. e next day the Emperor sent his chiefest Lords and Ba- ns, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which s sumptuously hanged with Tapistry, especially the great l, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich rple, as it had beene the Pallace of Salomon. The Am- ssadours entertaiued with maruellous royaltie, and ha- g deliuered the summe of their Ambassage, the Empe- r answered, that hee would conferre thereon with his

Councell,

Councell, in mes any while they might returne to their lo
gings. After they were departed the Hall the Empero
demanded of the Princesse, Electors, and the rest of his fa
bilitie, if these marriages of his sonne and daughter, w
the heire and Princesse of France, might not bee graunte
as well for the vtilitie and honour of the Empire, as for th
generall benefit of Christendome, commaunding them
speake their iudgements without feare. The Lords al
gether answered, that the motion was so good and the a
ance so honourable, as it was no way to be misliked. I w
then (quoth he) talke with the Empresse, that she may v
derstand her daughters opinion, & then my Lords of Franc
shall be answered. So leauing them he went vnto the Em
presse chamber, to whom hee reported his agreement wi
his Councell, which pleased her likewise marueilous wel
but when she had a little considered on the matter, she an
swered, that but little could be said before Trineus returne
home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, b
in meane time I pray you sound your daughters iudgemen
that we may returne our brother of Fraunce some certain
answer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing fro
her Lord, she went to her daughers chamber, where hauin
commaunded her Ladies aside, she thus began. Faire daug
ter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you ma
rie with the eldest sonne and heire of Fraunce, and yo
brother Trineus with his sister, for he is one of the mo
renowmed Kings in Europe, and his son recounted amon
the best Knights of the world: for which good fortune yo
may thanke the heauens, that so great a Prince offers h
Sonne to be your husband. Aduise your selfe of your an
swer, for by your opinion must the Ambassadours be dispa
ched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but t
conclude these honourable marriages. Polinarda hearing t
words of her mother, was surprized with such sodaine he
uines, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing t
Empresse should perceiue that her loue was alreadie b
termin

ermined, with a sadde countenance thus replyed.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you and all the Nobilitie, that I would not Marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot do, without impeaching of myne Honour. And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who euermore esteemed his Promise aboue all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will neuer marrie with the Princesse Lucemanie: For he Loues one many degrées beyonde her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladyes that euer Nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you haue excuses sufficient and auaileable, where with to answere the King of Fraunce. It may bee (quoth the Empresse) that your Brother loues else-where: but I can tell ye, that neither for you shall do any thing, contrarie to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda, seing her Mother persist in her opinion, bitte in her sorrowes with many secrete sighes: yet knew shée so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her priuate meaning. So returned shee to the Emperour, aduertising him of her Daughters answere: wherat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his Daughter, saying: Why, how now Daughter? Are you so bolde to disobey my commaundement? Or dare you repugne against my will? All is to no end that you haue doubted with your Mother: For (will yée or no) it shall be as I haue appoynted. I knowe right well dread Lorde and Father, (quoth she) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to matche with the Sonne of Fraunce, considering what promise I haue made vnto my déere Brother: and if I should but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I haue promised, I should thinke my selfe vnworthie hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute

in

in her answere, and therewith shedde such a boundance
teares, as the Emperour was constrayned to tell the Am
bassadours, that the marriages could not bee concluded t
the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding hee granted
the acticles of their embassage. The princesse qualifyi
her greefe as well as shee could, sent for the Dwarfe, a
taking him by the hand, sayde. Alas my friende, I a
now in the greatest perplenty in the world, neuertheles
one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true lo
and loyaltie I beare thy maister, which neuer shall be br
ken, what euer become of me. And would to God hee wa
now heere, then would I speake it openly without fea
of any, that I am his, and he myne. Madame, quoth th
Dwarfe, if you continue faithfull to my maister, perswa
your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constan
cie, takes such continuall pleasure in remembring you, th
it is the onely meane that preserues his life: and you m
bee bolde to credit me, that if your brothers loue did n
with-hold him, hee would haue bin here long ere this, b
he will come some inough (I hope) to end this doubt. As fo
me, I am of the opinion that heauen will not suffer so g
a knight to die, but first will permit him to see his mistre
Die? quoth the princesse, sooner let all the knights in th
world ende their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of Franc
likewise, though hee loue mee so deerely, so might I bee
of these importunate Ambassadours. The Emperour se
ing hee could get no other answere of his daughter, conclu
ded with the French ambassadors, that so soone as his so
was returned, hee should be aduertized, and so for that tim
they might depart: but the empresse and hee first bestowe
on them many rich presents, and so in short time they a
riued againe in Fraunce, where great ioy was made b
hope of these marriages, albeit they little thought th
Prince Trineus would tarrie so long. Aboue all other, th
French prince was most ioyfull, hearing the Countie
Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: bu
shee

e good Lady was of an other minde, for shee had rather be-
e her selfe to a Cloyster, then to breake her Faith to Pal-
erin, whom shee loued so constantly. Thus leaue wee her
ntering with Vrbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the
rince Trineus.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin beeing thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marrie the Princesse Agriola.

THis Noble company beeing thus on the Sea, hauing Winde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure daies they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse Agriola very pensiue and sadde, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake. O Soueraigne Creatour, howe shall I render sufficient thankes and praise to thee, in graunting mee the onely thing desired? Ah sweet Madame, and my onely deere Mistresse Agriola, howe much is your Seruant indebted to you? Hath my Knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I? Beleeue mee fayre Princesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious Nature, and I so ioyfull of my happy Fortune, as either Friend or Father shall fetch you againe from me. If life might endure the length of ten mens, and euery day should accomplish wonders in your good Seruice, yet could not remunerate the least parte of your Princelie deserts. But if your Loue be such to mee, as I am right well assured

it

it is, let me intreat you to forbeare this heauinesse, and ba-
from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for seeing y
so sadde and pensiue, I suffer a torment worser then dea-
selfe. For let me perceyue (how little soeuer it bee) that
presence may bee to your liking, and our present Enter-
somewhat more pleasing: I sive to the Heauens with
ceit of happines, and value my Fortune aboue the reach of
mane capacity. In stéd of teares, let vs vse quainte tra-
and for these dumps, pleasant imaginations: perswade yo
selfe Madame, you are now in his custodie that honours y
for your vertues, reuerenceth you for your diuine perfectio
extolleth you for incomparable merites, and liueth for y
with his very vttermost endeuors. Thinke not Madam
though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardon
ble: For the new allyance wherein you haue combined y
selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: th
what you doo imagine now a dangerous offence, will bee
puted an act of prouident and Princely discretion. Then th
you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his pra
ses of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both ri
ly and sufficiently performed. Let these perswasions, if
my intreatyes, excell these Passions, and procure better co
fort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left y
Natiue Countrey, consider the occasion, the loue of a migh
Prince, and the Heauenly appoyntment, that your noble ve
tues should be coupled together, hath brought you from En
land, to sit on the Imperiall seate in Allemaigne.

How carefull haue we haue bene of your honour, your fa
can witnesse, no motion beeing offered to preiudice your h
king. That you are contracted before the onely Immort
witnesse, you will not denie: Therefore to preuent all ev
ing daungers, the actuall Ceremonie shall be heere celeb
and the Royaltie thereof duely Solemnized, when wee h
come into Allemaigne. So if Hymen claimes his due, y
may graunt it without any reproache, and Iuno will as w
smile at her sacred Offering here, as if it were in Bower,
Pal

l. The credite of Princes, are charie, and angrie Parents
ay hinder, what heauen doth further: but the deede done, it
nnot be recalled, nor can you be diuorced but only by death,
d pittie were it, loue so well begun, but should continue,
erefore (so please you) let it be performed. The Princes
th agreed, they were married requiting their chast loue,
ith a simpathie of vertuous desires: but this time of de-
ht and pleasure had small continuance, for Fortune enemy
prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sonne Mischance
nuerted their ioyes into sorrow, teares, and pains vnspeas
le, as you shall reade hereafter.

These Louers thus riding merrily on the streame, sud-
nly the Sea began to swell, the winde changed roughly,
e Skies were troubled, and such a dangerous tempest beat
on their ship, as the Pilot, Maister, and Mariners knew
ot what to say, and fiue dayes together they were in this
rplexitie, sometime forward, then againe backeward, that
o hope of life was expected, but euery one prepared them-
lues for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they
uld desire no other remedy. Agriola not accustomed to these
angers, was maruellously discomforted: but Trineus per-
waded her with many examples, in that such stratagems
ere vsual on the Sea, albeit, she to end the feare she saw be-
re her eyes, would often times haue cast her selfe into the
aging waters. At length the tempest ouer-passed, they de-
cryed an Island, whereto with the helpe of their Oares they
oasted, shrouding themselues vnder the sides of an high
mountaine: and although the place seemed casuall, yet there
hey determined to cast Anker, vntill the Seas were more
alme and quiet. Being thus vnder the Lee, and defended
rom the winde with the huge Rocke, Palmerin came vpon
he hatches, to see what iudgement he could make of the I-
lan, and so delectable the country seemed vnto him, as he was
esirous to goe on shore, taking his Faulcon on his fist that
was giuen him in England, so with no other defence but his
Sword, he went to view the soyle, not suffering any body

to beare him company. Trineus and Agriola perswaded h
to the contrary, but all would not serue: for the scituation
the Countrey pleased him so well, as he walked on in gr
contentation, not minding to returne againe to the ship,
toward the euening.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Trineus, Agriola, Ptolome and all their Marrine
were taken by the Turks, after that Palmerin was go
to view the Island.

The Historie reporteth, that while Pa
merin was thus absent, there arri
foure or fiue Turkish Galliers, who li
wise glad to shunthe tempestuous we
ther, cast Anker neere to Trineus sh
and seeing no body on the decke of th
strange vessel, because (fearing no har
they were all at rest: they enuironed
about, and hauing boorded it, the Captaine of the Turks call
to them, saying: What? are ye asleepe within, that ye let
boord ye without any resistance? by the reuerence of our go
we shall awake ye: but little to your ease. So came the So
diours on boord after their Captaine, who put the Pilot
the Maister, and many of the Mariners to the Sword, sp
ring none but such as they pleased to ransome. Then se
ching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola, and Pt
lome, whom they tooke prisoners, by reason they were una
med, as also somewhat sickely after their rough passag
The rouing Captaine or Pyrate, named Olimael, noti
th

singular beauty of Agriola, commaunded her to be car-
ed on bord his Galley. When the Princesse sawe her
selfe so hardly handled, and that her Lord was prysoner
with these villainous Moores, so that perforce they must a-
bandon one another: she brake forth into pittifull acclama-
tions, and loking on her husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord,
how hard and strange is this fortune? haue we escaped a tem-
pest so daungerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extremi-
tie? Oh that you and Syr Ptolome had bene Armed, that
these Moores might haue bought our lines with the Sword:
But despightfull chaunce hath so thwarted vs, as no meane
is left to preuent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how greeuous is
mine absence, and how displeasant will our mishap be to
thee: how much would thy valour now auaile vs, being vt-
terly destitute of any succour or refuge? I know our mis-
hap will so offend thée, as I feare thou wilt do some outrage
on thy selfe. With these words she fell downe among them
in a dead traunce, the sight whereof so enraged Trineus and
Ptolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores hands,
they laide about them so lustily, that in short time they had
slayne halfe a score of them. But vnable were they to con-
tend against so many, wherefore being taken againe, they
were bound so cruelly with Cords and Chaines, as rent
their tender and delicate flesh in many places: and being so
conueyed into another Galley, their Squires likewise pri-
soners with them, the Moores toke what they pleased out
of the Ship, and when they had done, set it on fire. Then
presently they weyed Anchor, and launching away, made
saile, least any reskew should follow them, so that quick-
ly they lost the sight of the Iland, and Olimael com-
ming to sir Agriola, assayed by any meanes to asswage her
sorrowfulnesse, embracing her in his armes, and promising her
great riches if shee would be pacified. But all his speeches
were in vaine, for thée seeing the Moore imbrace her, with
angry stomacke like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the
haire and the throate, saying: Thou villaine Dogge, thinkest

thou I take any delight in thy company? How durst thou traitourly thefe lay hande on mee? And so roughly did struggle with Olimael, as if his men had not assisted him hee had strangled him: notwithstanding hee tooke all patiently, perswading himselfe, that by gentle speeches, smooth flatterings, and large promises, hee should in time winne to his pleasure. So came he forth of the cabin, with his throat and face brauely painted with Agriolaes nayles, washing away the blood, which made comely circles about his phisnomie: then called hee the Captaines and chiefe of his company, willing them to share the bootie among them, and he would haue nothing but the Princesse for his parte, for he was so inueigled with the beautie of his prisoner, as he had no delight but onely in beholding her. In this manner then he bestowed his prisonners, Trineus hee gaue to one of his Cozins, and Ptolome to a Knight that serued the Soldan of Babilon, the Squires and the pelfe hee gaue among the common Souldiours. But when the Prince saw hee must needes leaue his Lady, and each man would carry his prisoner whether him pleased: his greefe for his wife, and sorowe for his friendes, I leaue to your iudgement, as not able to be expressed. Yet some hope of comfort hee reposed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being escaped they) hee should get againe Agriola, else was there way left to helpe him. Ptolome who dearely loued the Prince, before they parted, thus began. Why how now my Lord, where is your wonted prudence and discretion? Why is that constant magnanimitie, which in so many sorowes heeretofore you vsed? what? is it lost, or haue you forgot? What meane ye? will ye be subiect to passions, as a weake effeminate person? You that are sprung from the most ancient noble and generous race of Christendome, either for a most courageous and vertuous Knight, will you be driuen into these sad and desolate opinions? What then would a Turke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon do in his afflictions? when he that hath assurance of his God, and

t all persecutions, fortunes and mishaps, are proues of fidelitie, and the meanes to attaine eternall quiet, shewes e vndutifull behauiors, as though he had lost all meanes hope and comforte. If the body be afflicted, let the spirite animated, and armed with patience, against all infirmi-s of the flesh. Leaue these soft countenances for Women, d if you will not perswade your selfe, that these troubles ppen for the encreasing of our ioy, it may bee the meane at God will forsake vs. Then neyther feare or dispayre pray you, for hee that suffered vs to fall into those Moores ndes, both can and will deliuer vs againe. As for your ady Agriola, doubt not of her vnconquerable loyalty, for hee hath in her custody a iewell of such vertue, as no one can shonour her against her owne lyking. Comfort her selfe en in the power of the highest, and repose your selfe on the nstancie of your Lady, with this certaine perswasion, that is crosse and aduersitie hath fallen vpon vs, for our grea-r good and aduauncement hereafter. Then came Olima-l, and interrupted theyr talke, commaunding nine or ten his people, to conuay Trineus into another Galley, and Prolome into that where his Maister was, that so they ight depart, to recouer the rest of theyr Galleys, which ere scattered from them by reason of the tempest. And so hey departed one from another, the Galley wherein Tri-eus was discrying a goodly Ship of Christians, whereof hey beeing glad, sette sayle with the winde towardes the Christians, who rode awaye so fast as they could, and had scaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who ioyning with the Gallyes, in the ende bor-ded her, and parted the spoyle among them: the winde sud-denly beganne to chaunge, so that they were constrained to tye for succour to an Islande in the Kingdome of Persia, which they reached in good time, glad to shelde themselues from daunger: These Pyrates thus come to Hauen, went all on shore to refresh themselues: but they hadde no ooner sette foote on land, such enchauntments were there dis-

 persed,

pearsed through the whole Isle, as they presently knewe
one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of th
Enchauntments, you must note, that the Isle where th
landed was called Malfada, which name was giuen it by
Lady thereof, which was called likewise Malfada, the mo
subtill Magitian of her time: so that we may say of her, as
Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit she w
issued of Christian Parents, yet hauing such familiarity w
the Diuell and his maligne spirites she would not acqua
her selfe with any goodnesse towards Christians, but da
practised theyr harme and destruction. And for this intent,
had of a long time before Enchaunted this Island with s
Charmes, that what Shipping soeuer arriued there, co
neuer depart thence againe, much lesse such as once ent
within the Island. They being thus stayed, Malfada wo
come her selfe, and choose such as shee liked, the rest she tra
formed into Harts, Wolues, Dogges, Beares, and all ma
ner of Beasts. Such likewise as she tooke with her into
Forceresse, when he hadde abused them to content her ow
pleasure, shee would cast them forth, transforming them
she did the other: In briefe, shée was worse then a Di
this Island was a very disguised hell. This wicked wou
knowing that more vnfortunate people were Landed at
Hauen, called her Seruaunts, and came to sée them: but
made no great account of them, wherefore shée commaund
her trustyest Seruaunts to take away all the Riches fort
the Shippe, connerting it by her Enchauntment, that it
med like a bottomelesse gulfe. Afterwards at her pleasure,
transformed them that came into it: Among whom Te
was changed into the shape of a very fayre Dogge: not t
hée was so, for that is a thing against nature, and which G
no way will permit that Man shall take any Brutish sh
or a brute Beast assume any humane forme. For the M
all dispositions thus holde theyr Arte, that the Enchaun
estéeme themselues Beastes, and of that was this disfig
Mastiue; notwithstanding, these distressed Captiues

trall reason and humane power, but the benefit of speech is taken from them. And thus was Trineus transformed, which he seemed not to mislike, for not remembring himselfe, forgot all his beanie passions marvelling only at his sudaine mutation. And here will we leaue him in his straunge semitie, to report what befell to the Princesse Agriola, er that dolorous separation betweene her Lord and her.

THus Gentlemen haue we left the Prince *Trineus* transformed into the shape of a Dogge, in the Isle of *Malfada*, by the Enchauntresse: the English Princesse *griola*, in the custody of the Turkish Pirate *Olimael*: Ptoe and *Colmelio* carried into *Aethiopia*, and *Palmerin* raunging in the Islande with his Hauke for his delight. Right raunge will be the meeting of all these friendes againe, ter the hazards of many perillous fortunes. For *Agriola* us separated from the Prince her husband, is maried to e great Emperour of *Turkie*: how wonderfully the ring hich *Palmerin* gaue her, preserues her chastitie, will bee orth the hearing. How *Palmerin* counterfeiting himselfe unbe, doth many rare exployts in the Isle of *Calphe*, ill be as acceptable. How *Palmerin* gaines his *Polinarda*, rineus his chast wife *Agriola*, *Ptolome* his *Brionella*, and all onors meeting together in the Emperours Court of *llemaigne*, will be so strange as the like was neuer heard: d all this performes the second part, which shall be pubhed so soone as it can be printed.

FINIS.

A. Mundy

Honos alit Artes,